

File Sen. Judiciary
Approved For Release 2005/06/22 : CIA-RDP75B00380R000300010086-8

U.S.S.R. LABOR CAMPS

HEARINGS

BEFORE THE

**SUBCOMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE THE
ADMINISTRATION OF THE INTERNAL SECURITY
ACT AND OTHER INTERNAL SECURITY LAWS**

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY

UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-THIRD CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

PART 3

FEBRUARY 2, 1973

AFTERNOON SESSION

Printed for the use of the Committee on the Judiciary



U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE

93-090

WASHINGTON : 1973

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents
U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C. 20402
Price \$1.50 domestic postpaid or \$1.25 GPO Bookstore
Stock Number 5270-01777

Approved For Release 2005/06/22 : CIA-RDP75B00380R000300010086-8

COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY

JAMES O. EASTLAND, Mississippi, *Chairman*

JOHN L. McCLELLAN, Arkansas	ROMAN L. HRUSKA, Nebraska
SAM J. ERVIN, Jr., North Carolina	HIRAM L. FONG, Hawaii
PHILIP A. HART, Michigan	HUGH SCOTT, Pennsylvania
EDWARD M. KENNEDY, Massachusetts	STROM THURMOND, South Carolina
BIRCH BAYH, Indiana	MARLOW W. COOK, Kentucky
QUENTIN N. BURDICK, North Dakota	CHARLES McC. MATHIAS, Jr., Maryland
ROBERT C. BYRD, West Virginia	EDWARD J. GURNEY, Florida
JOHN V. TUNNEY, California	

SUBCOMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE THE ADMINISTRATION OF THE INTERNAL
SECURITY ACT AND OTHER INTERNAL SECURITY LAWS

JAMES O. EASTLAND, Mississippi, *Chairman*

JOHN L. McCLELLAN, Arkansas	HUGH SCOTT, Pennsylvania
SAM J. ERVIN, Jr., North Carolina	STROM THURMOND, South Carolina
BIRCH BAYH, Indiana	MARLOW W. COOK, Kentucky
	EDWARD J. GURNEY, Florida

J. G. SOURWINE, *Chief Counsel*
SAMUEL J. SCOTT, *Associate Counsel*
WARREN LITTMAN, *Associate Counsel*
JOHN R. NORPIL, *Director of Research*
ALFONSO L. TARABOCHIA, *Chief Investigator*

U.S.S.R. LABOR CAMPS

FRIDAY, FEBRUARY 2, 1973

U.S. SENATE,
SUBCOMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE THE
ADMINISTRATION OF THE INTERNAL SECURITY ACT
AND OTHER INTERNAL SECURITY LAWS
OF THE COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY,
Washington, D.C.

The subcommittee met, pursuant to notice, at 2:30 p.m., in room 2228, Dirksen Senate Office Building, Senator Edward J. Gurney presiding.

Also present: J. G. Sourwine, chief counsel; Samuel J. Scott, associate counsel; A. L. Tarabochia, chief investigator; David Martin, senior analyst.

AFTERNOON SESSION

Senator GURNEY. The subcommittee will come to order.

This subcommittee is charged with assessing all possible threats to our Nation's internal security . . . and this is a most important duty . . . one which will be fulfilled with propriety . . . with an honest attempt to get at all the facts . . . and with a sense of responsibility to the American people.

The testimony we have heard yesterday and today shows the tenacity of the human spirit . . . the ability of men of faith to survive almost unimaginable ordeals when they believe in freedom, and have a burning desire to tell the world of what they have undergone, so that the world may someday be rid of this cancer of communism.

More important yet, the testimony reveals how one group of human beings is subjected to almost complete degradation by a totalitarian form of government. It shows how Soviet Jewry . . . those articulate people who believe in the freedom and dignity of mankind . . . have been subjected to gross abuse in an effort to stifle their voices.

This tactic of suppression of a vocal segment of a population is not distant in time and geography . . . it is happening today . . . and it is drawing closer to our Nation.

The same Communist tactics used to repress great groups of people are now being used in Cuba . . . at the doorstep of our Nation.

This story of Communist repression of dissent and brutal imprisonment of dissidents from minority groups must alert the world to the failings of that form of government.

Mr. Shifrin has spent the last 2 days telling that story, and I now ask him to continue to work with this subcommittee, and at an appropriate time to assist in making appropriate recommendations as to what might help to free these prisoners of a political regime so hostile to individual rights, that it is repugnant to the entire free world.

Slavery ended in this Nation and most other civilized countries over a hundred years ago.

Yet, the testimony here in these last 2 days indicates that millions, probably tens of millions, of people in the Soviet Union are slaves to their brutal government. Why? Because they have dared to speak out

against the brutal policies of a totalitarian government and proudly proclaim their belief in their God and their faith.

Counsel has some housekeeping details he would like to present for the record at this time.

Mr. SOURWINE. Mr. Chairman, first we have a chronology of Mr. Shifrin's imprisonment in the U.S.S.R. prepared by the staff but checked with Mr. Shifrin as to accuracy. I would like to have the order be that it will go in the record at this point, and Mr. Shifrin will have the right when he corrects the record to make any corrections that he finds that he thinks he wants to make.

Senator GURNEY. It will be so ordered.

[The chronology referred to appears on p. 35 of pt. 1.]

Mr. SOURWINE. We have several lists categorized by prisons of other prisoners met by Mr. Shifrin in some of the various prisons he has been in and this is by no means in any case a comprehensive list, but these are names of people that have been identified and may be of some interest, and I would like to ask that these lists by prison go in at this time with these small paragraphs of identifying materials respective to people's names.

Senator GURNEY. They will be received in evidence and be placed in the record.

[The biographies referred to can be found in chronological order, in the staff summary printed in pt. 1 of the hearing.]

Mr. SOURWINE. Thank you.

Then I have a few questions which I think will fill in possible blanks in the record.

Mr. Shifrin, I do not believe it has been brought out yet in the record, certainly not clearly, that you were by no means an ordinary prisoner; that you were an officer of grade in the Army of the Soviet Union and that you are by way of being a war hero. And I would like to cover this briefly with a few leading questions if the Chair will permit.

You were conscripted in 1941 and immediately assigned to a penal battalion because your father was a class enemy?

Mr. SHIFRIN. No, he was not class enemy. He was arrested without any crime.

Mr. SOURWINE. I understand that.

Mr. SHIFRIN. And they told him that he is enemy of the people. That is big difference.

Mr. SOURWINE. This was their words and not mine.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; I understand you.

Mr. SOURWINE. All right, now, a penal battalion was a battalion that was sent to the front lines?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. The penal battalions were short on weapons?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes. It was maybe 1 out of 10 who have rifles.

Mr. SOURWINE. As you told it when the staff interviewed you, you were told: "Your weapons are in the hands of the Nazis; go get them."

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes, this officer—not officer, some sergeant told to us: "Your rifles in the hands of the Nazis; you must catch them."

Mr. SOURWINE. Thank you. All you had to do was say "Yes." Please forgive me. I am trying to cover time fast.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; you are right.

Mr. SOURWINE. It sounds better when you say it, but it reads just the same either way in the record.

Now, you were wounded?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Twice.

Mr. SOURWINE. Several times?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Twice.

Mr. SOURWINE. Twice?

Mr. SHIFRIN. In 1941 and 1942.

Mr. SOURWINE. Now the first time you were wounded, were you sent back to the penal battalion?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. The second time also you were sent back to the penal battalion?

Mr. SHIFRIN. No, sir.

Mr. SOURWINE. How did you become an officer?

Mr. SHIFRIN. I have seen after the second wound that they want only to kill me, and that is why on the way to central hospital, I changed my identification. I gave another date of birth, I gave another place of birth, and I changed my name from Avraham to Ivrahim. And that is why I came after hospital to regular regiment, and in this regiment, in first battle, when our officer was killed, I became officer; battlefield promotion.

Mr. SOURWINE. You got a battlefield promotion and you eventually became a major, did you not?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; a major in 1943.

Mr. SOURWINE. How serious was your wound?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Both times they said it was serious. In the first, it was my hand—

Mr. BOLDYREFF. In the joint.

Mr. SHIFRIN. And in the second, my legs were full with the iron. In many places I was wounded in the legs.

Mr. SOURWINE. Yes, sir. You were decorated, were you not?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. And you fought through the whole war?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; to the end. I was demobilized after the end.

Mr. SOURWINE. After the war you went to Krasnodar region as an investigator of banditry?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes, banditry.

Mr. SOURWINE. You were promoted to chief of the investigative unit?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. You were transported to headquarters of the department to combat banditry in Moscow?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes, sir.

Mr. SOURWINE. You took a correspondence course in law?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes, sir.

Mr. SOURWINE. You were made chief investigator at Tula?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. You there became chief legal adviser in secret war plant number 535?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; you are right.

Mr. SOURWINE. That plant was making automatic guns for fighter aircraft?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. It also made antiaircraft guns for the navy and mine launchers?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. You served there from 1948 to 1952?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. You were then transferred to Moscow to the Ministry of Defense?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. As chief legal adviser in the Contract Division of the Juridical Department?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. You received your law diploma in 1953. You got your law diploma in 1953?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. You are a lawyer?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. I thought that material should be in the record. You were not an ordinary prisoner.

Now, you served in defense plants in the Soviet Union. What can you tell us about Soviet defense plants? Are there many instances where the plants produced both war material and civilian goods?

Mr. SHIFRIN. You see, it is very interesting that in U.S.S.R. I have seen it myself, that many war plants, they officially listed as plants in another ministry but not in Ministry of Defense. Such cases; in Tula, they have big plant, maybe 40 shops in the plant, and they make weapons and ammunition. But 39 shops make weapons and ammunition, and one shop make samovars. You know, for tea.

Mr. SOURWINE. Civilian items?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes. That is why this plant has name "Samovarniy"—Samovar factory—not army plant, and they have money from Ministry of Light Industry.

Mr. SOURWINE. Similarly, at Chelyabinsk they had a pipe plant which really made ammunition?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Right, in Chelyabinsk—barrels for guns.

Mr. SOURWINE. In Izhevsk they had a motorcycle plant that made tractor vehicles armed with guns and rifles and motorcycles equipped with machineguns?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. You have personal knowledge of these things because in some of the cases you drew the contracts; didn't you?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes, I drew contracts and also I have seen plants.

Mr. SOURWINE. Is similar camouflage used with respect to atomic plants in the Soviet Union?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes, they have special committee of atomic energy, and under command of this committee they have Ministry of—how do you say it? Medium Machinery.

And this Medium Machinery Ministry, gave money to them. And that is why in U.S.S.R. you can see millions which go in budget to machinery but in reality it goes to weapons plants.

Mr. SOURWINE. Now, your first-hand knowledge of those matters was before you went to Siberia. Now, do you know whether the situation has changed since then?

Mr. SHIFRIN. No; this situation didn't change. Many of my friends, which work with me in the days before my arrest, they work now in the same ministry, and I have seen them in 1965, 1969, 1970, and they told me that the situation didn't change.

Mr. SOURWINE. Thank you.

Now I want to go to another matter. You have discussed the anti-Jewish terror, the Doctors' Plot. Now, is it correct that your boss was arrested before you were at the time you were arrested in 1953?

Mr. SHIFRIN. No; he was not arrested. KGB secret service, came to arrest him in Ministry of Defense and said to him—his secretary explained to me later—that he lost secret paper and when he have seen that he would be arrested by these killers, he sprung from the window from this big building, six stories high to the courtyard, and committed suicide.

Mr. SOURWINE. That was 2 days before you were arrested?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; 2, 3 days before my arrest.

Mr. SOURWINE. Now, another matter. While you were in Lubyanka you met the screen writer Makliarsky?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; he was twice winner of Stalin prize.

Mr. SOURWINE. He had specialized in scripts glorifying the KGB?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; he wrote big scenarios and they made big films of the work of KGB—and then they arrested him.

Mr. SOURWINE. But even though he was almost a hero of the Soviet Union and the favorite of Stalin, he was put in jail because he wrote one pro-Zionist poem?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; this was in 1922, or 1921, when he was ordinary journalist in Odessa he wrote in some newspaper Zionist poetry, little poetry.

Mr. SOURWINE. And years later they found it?

Mr. SHIFRIN. And they found it in 1949 or 1950.

Mr. SOURWINE. More than 20 years later?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes. In 1950, and they arrested him only for this crime. Then they released him in 1954. He was in freedom after. I got from him a letter.

Mr. SOURWINE. Now, at the time of your move from Butyrskaya, do you remember telling us they moved you in an ice cream van?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Oh, yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. Tell us about that.

Mr. SHIFRIN. They don't want to show to foreigners these special cars for prisoners. They have special built cars—vans for prisoners. And that is why on the wall of these vans you can see "Bread," "Butter," "Meat." And we always make jokes that we are good meat—fresh meat. And also I was once in the car with words "Ice Cream" and with the picture of a big bear eating ice cream.

Senator GURNEY. This is so the people wouldn't know that prisoners are being transported?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; these cars go in the street, and people think that it is ice cream.

Mr. SOURWINE. When you were transferred from Butyrskaya, you were "ice cream"; when you were transferred from Chelyabinsk, you were "meat?"

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; but, excuse me, please. Now they build near Butyrskaya a prison—Butyrskaya Prison is very big prison—in the corner of this prison, very big, 15-story building and this building is only for KGB families. And with this big building, they cover this prison, but in the middle of this building you can see big tunnel, and in this tunnel you can see big iron gates of prison, and you can see how these vans of "meat" and "ice cream" came to this prison in the daytime. That is in the street—you see on the map. Please send your tourists to visit this place on Butyrsky Val street, just 5 minutes from Kremlin, and they can see all that with their own eyes.

Mr. SOURWINE. And now, Mr. Shifrin, while you were at Novosibirsk you ran across a new form of animal life, didn't you?

Mr. SHIFRIN. I don't understand questions.

Mr. SOURWINE. A new form of animal life—

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; those big rats, yes; bigger than cats.

Mr. SOURWINE. Tell us about that.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; bigger than cats. They have their transit concentration camps with barracks. And they have long latrine, maybe 50 or 60 meters long, because thousands of people there were in the camp. When I came to this latrine, I was astonished because these big rats ran around without any fear of people, in hundreds.

Mr. SOURWINE. You are not just measuring like a man would a fish [indicating]. You are talking about 8 inches long, is that right?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Maybe 30 or 35 centimeters—12 inches. All my 10 years in the prisons, I have seen these rats which they have in concentration camps.

Mr. SOURWINE. All right. Now, you remember telling us about the incident involving the Russian repatriates from China?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; that was camp 25, in Tayshet.

Mr. SOURWINE. Tell us about that.

Mr. SHIFRIN. It was in Tayshet. When we came, in this camp near railway—maybe 10 to 15 meters away—one of prisoners or two of prisoners was on the roof of barracks; and they have seen big cattle train and there came women from the cars of cattle train, and one of prisoners recognized his wife and shouted, and she answered. Then she came to fence and asked how to come to us. Husband answered, "You can't come—it's prison." "No," she answered, "on your fence in big letters it says that this is oil depot, refinery station." The women were wives of Russian repatriates from China. They send them to U.S.S.R. from China. They arrested them immediately. And then they told the wives that they must go to the husbands, and they send them with this train. And I have seen this meeting of husbands and wives. They see each other only from the distance. KGB moved this train and these women—they have children and baggage in the cars—got on and go with train. Entire meeting was only maybe 15 or 20 minutes. It was accidental. It wasn't arranged.

Mr. SOURWINE. Mr. Chairman, I have here several staff summaries relating to incidents or indications or areas of testimony that have been gone over in staff interviews. Time is not going to permit the witness

to tell them all, but I think they should be in the record. May the offer be, I will identify them sufficiently as to what they are, and they go in the record subject to correction by the witness when he corrects his own testimony?

Senator GURNEY. So ordered.

Mr. SOURWINE. And we will include then, a summary of his experiences in hospitals, in prison hospitals.

Senator GURNEY. They will be included.

Mr. SOURWINE. A further detail about the new wave of prisoners will be included.

Senator GURNEY. That will be included.

Mr. SOURWINE. And an incident involving certain former KGB officers whom the witness in staff conference referred to as Buryak?

Senator GURNEY. That will be included.

Mr. SOURWINE. Details with regard to what was referred to as the massacre of the Yiddish writers.

Senator GURNEY. That will be included.

Mr. SOURWINE. And a brief explanation, which I think has been made in more detail by the witness already, but probably should be in an abbreviated form, about the basis on which he prepared his map.

Senator GURNEY. That will be included.

Mr. SOURWINE. The thought occurs to me, Mr. Chairman, that it might be advantageous, in the interest of continuity and clarity, to incorporate in the hearing record the entire text of the staff summary prepared in advance of this hearing.

Senator GURNEY. So ordered.

[The material referred to above will be found in the staff summary at the beginning of part 1.]

Mr. SOURWINE. That is all I have, Mr. Chairman.

Senator GURNEY. Each of these will be subject to review by the witness as to their accuracy.

Now Mr. Shifrin, would you like to proceed with where we left off this morning? I think you were on the prisoners of war, as I recall it.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes, sir.

Senator GURNEY. And if you can summarize as concisely as possible I would appreciate it. Proceed.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Excuse me, please. Sometimes my answer is not short, but you must understand me that I have too many things what I must tell you.

Senator GURNEY. I understand.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Because I am responsible for my friends, which are now in my place in concentration camps. I will try to be short.

Now, about these prisoners of war. When I came to Tayshet, I met with thousands of prisoners of war: German, Italian, Spanish, and also Japanese, Belgian.

Senator GURNEY. These were mostly prisoners from World War II?

Mr. SHIFRIN. World War II; yes. These people explained to me that they was brought to this Tayshet Forest in 1945. It was not here any railway then and it was not here also highway. They put them in the forest and they built, at first, highway from camp to camp. Excuse me: before this they build concentration camps for themselves. They cut

this forest and built highway, and then near this highway they built railway. And they told me that now in my time—in 1954—it is here like resort. But I here heard this from living corpses. In 1945, 1946, 1947, 1948 it—they told me—was days when people died in hundreds each day from starvation. They showed me kilometers of cemeteries on the side, and then, I told you, I have seen these cemeteries which go near the railway. They explained to me that along this railway was the Kwantung Army and hundreds of thousands of other POW's. And it was truth. I don't know how many died there—maybe million and maybe more because it is a 600 kilometers railway and highway, and on both sides cemeteries without intervals.

When I came I met not millions of POW's; I met only thousands. But we know that in Kwantung Army was million soldiers.

In 1956 when they released these prisoners, I have seen how they put them in the trains near our concentration camp. They brought them from all along the railway; from all the concentration camps, and I have seen that it was only some 10,000 people: Germans, French, Spanish, Japanese,

Now, try to understand how many died here.

I have seen only maybe hundreds of these German officers, and they told me that most of these prisoners of war died there. After 1956 KGB released other foreigners from Tayshet, it was citizens from Czechoslovakia, Poland, Iran, and other countries.

It was also Belgian officers. Was maybe 12 to 15 of these officers. I don't know why they didn't release them in 1956. I don't know. They were there to 1962. At the end of 1962 they released them.

When Queen of Belgians came to U.S.S.R., she asked to see these officers and in big hurry came, KGB, to our concentration camp. The Belgians was in concentration camp No. 7 in Potma because in these days we was not in Tayshet; we was in Potma.

I told you yesterday they brought us from Tayshet to Potma in 1960, and these Belgians came together with us. Only in 1962 KGB sent them home.

Also in 1963 once I have met with group of criminals which came to our concentration camp, No. 7, and when I asked them in which place they were, they told me we were in Island of Wrangel. I asked, "Island of Wrangel? KGB has concentration camps there?" They answered me, "Yes; there is three concentration camps for prisoners of war and there sits only big officers from Germany, Italy, France, and Spain."

I didn't believe them, but now in Israel I met with one man in 1971—we have his letter; I would show his letter—and he explained to me, this man, that he was also in Island of Wrangel in 1962 and he have seen there three concentration camps with thousands of prisoners of war, and he explained to me that they have in one concentration camp atomic reactor, and they make experiments on the live people with radiation. In another concentration camp, they have experiments with physicians on the people and in third they have submarines and they have experiments with live people under water. And it is big secret, and he was there in the group of prisoners which gave to the prisoners food; he was not inside secret camps. He have heard from other prisoners about this work, and he sent to you letter and I gave to you this letter in which he wrote real names of these prisoners in Wrangel.

Also he told about two big people which he met on Wrangel. One of them, Alexander Trushnovich, head of anti-Communist Russian organization, NTS; he was kidnaped in 1953 from West Berlin. And another man which he have seen there and all the world don't know nothing about his fate; this man is Raoul Wallenberg, diplomat of Sweden, consul in Budapest, who save many thousands of Hungarian Jews from Nazis. They kidnap him in 1945, this man, and they always answer to free world that they don't know nothing about this man.

Senator GURNEY. Do we have the letter?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; you have letter.

Senator GURNEY. Proceed.

Mr. SHIFRIN. No; I think that is all I can tell about prisoners of war.

Senator GURNEY. In summary, then, what you have said was that the Russians kept their prisoners—and they probably captured hundreds of thousands during the course of the war—for a period of 10 to 15 years after the war and used them for slave labor all during that time?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; they also was in slave labor.

Senator GURNEY. And probably a majority of them died in prison camps?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; I am sure a majority.

Senator GURNEY. And then the other significant point was that in this prison camp in Island of Wrangel there was—

Mr. SHIFRIN. Italian, French, Spanish, and German.

Senator GURNEY. And they used prisoners for medical experiments, which were atomic medical experiments, I suppose, to see what the effect of radiation would be upon the human body?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes.

Senator GURNEY. Do you have any other points that you want to cover, Mr. Shifrin, not on prisoners of war, but any other points?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; I wanted very much to tell you something about this Jewish process in Leningrad, this Jewish trial in Leningrad. When they arrest these 12 people and 1 girl in 1970, crime of these people was only one; they want to go to Israel. And all of these 12 have two and three times refusal from Soviet Government when they gave documents and ask permission to go to Israel. Then these people decided to steal Russian plane, not hijack, but steal plane and to go to Sweden from Leningrad. It was their goal, and they arrest them before they committed this crime. They arrest them on land, not in the plane. They arrest them before they came to this plane, and they gave to these people death sentence, to two of them, and two others 15 and 10 years in prison.

Among those people was Silva Zalmanson, a brave Jewish girl, which is now in such situation that we wait maybe her death from day to day because she cannot swallow food. Something is wrong with her throat, and they don't permit the physician to see this girl. And permit me to tell that only some weeks ago we got letter from the prison from another prisoner, Galanskov, we also told to all the world that Galanskov maybe would die; that he is ill. And no one hear our voice. Now Galanskov died some weeks ago. Maybe it will be same with Silva; maybe it will be with her husband, Eduard

Kuznetsov, he is very ill. He cannot eat this food because he has ulcer and he is now in starvation. He cannot eat this rotten food.

And we have letters from their relatives about all this. I must tell you that these people showed the way to others—these people were so brave but they now are in desperation. And I ask you very much to make something—I tell you because your opinion very great in the world and I tell you about this terror.

I must tell you about them. These people in such situation—permit me to explain to you. I also was in this concentration camp No. 10 and I know that in reality it is prison. That is strict concentration camp in which now sit Eduard Kuznetsov. I was there 1 year (pointing to the map). Now here in the cell are 20 people. In this concrete barracks thin walls. Inside concrete they put railways—

Mr. BOLDYREFF. No, rails.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Rails, excuse me. Rails. And that is why in summer you cannot breath there. It is like in the oven in the cell. In the winter inside this cell on the wall where window it's front, 5 or 7 centimeters and sometimes 10 centimeters of frost inside the cell on the wall. On the ceiling always drops of water—because we were alive.

In each cell they have one, sometimes two, people with tuberculosis. In our cell was prisoner Baranov; he spit with the blood always.

Here you see on the map is women prison. Here I have seen once in winter of 1960 when chief of the prison, Buryak—his second name, Buryak—nickname "Hitler"—made something impossible. Once I was here preparing wood for the stoves in the courtyard of prison, and I have seen when Buryak and soldiers—overseers came to this women's prison in the Sunday and they shout to these women, go to wash—

Mr. BOLDYREFF. The shower.

Mr. SHIFRIN. To showers, to wash. And it was on Sunday, It was there nuns from convent, and they ask permit to pray on Sunday. But Buryak and soldiers tore from them clothes and pulled them on their backs through snow to shower.

In this prison I have seen each month that one, two prisoners go mad. My friends in desperation, in starvation now—and I must tell you about all this—there is the other map.

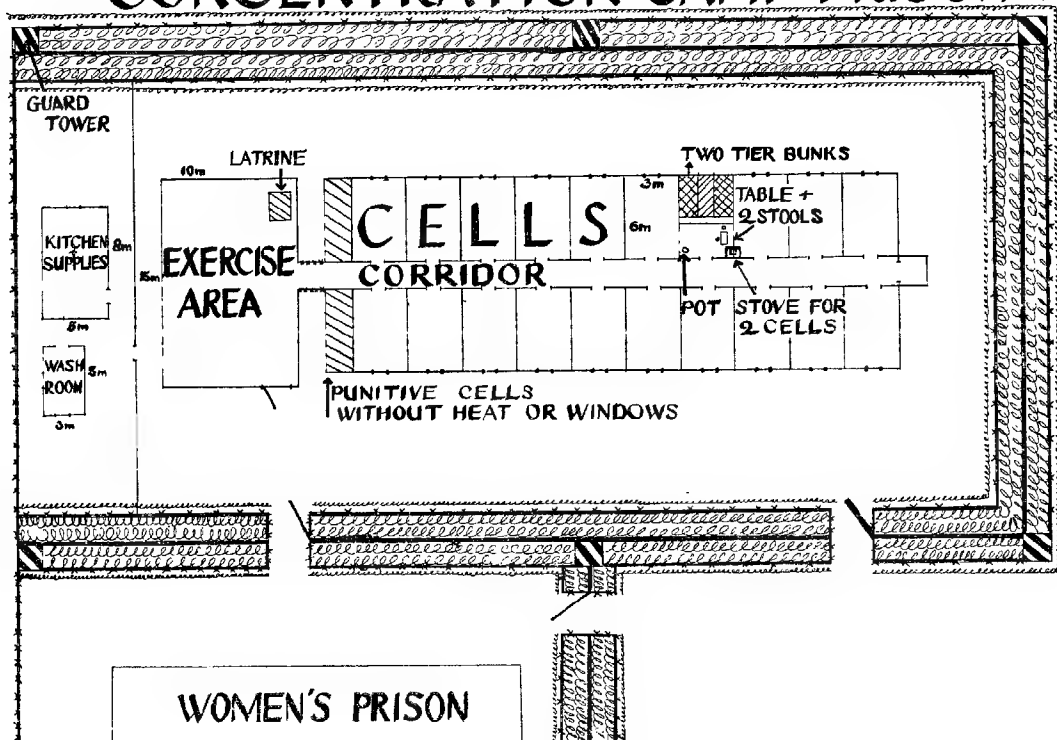
Mr. BOLDYREFF. Yes, here.

Mr. SHIFRIN. That is cell in which I was in another, strict concentration camp No. 10 in Potma and in this camp—which is in reality prison—now my friends, they sit here in these cells; that is also concrete barrack. Here it was very little cells. Here you have cell 3 meter by 3 meter. It were here in the cell, three Ukrainians, three from Baltic, and I—Jew—international. Seven people here in cell 3 on 3 meters. You can here lie only on your side. You cannot lie on the back.

Here you see a little table and only 30 inches from a common bunk in which we lie together to the door. And in this place near door two prisoners make work because they permit in this way to other prisoners to lie on the back on the bunk. [See diagram. part 1, page 61.]

In starvation, with hard labor on the brick plant, they are now here 1973. And here in camp No. 10 I have seen not one time but many times, when prisoners open their veins in desperation. They tried to commit suicide. And if you think that guards bring in these cases physicians, you mistaken. They tell: "You opened your own veins yourself. It is not our task." And so only friends try to help these people in such cases.

CONCENTRATION CAMP PRISON 410



I have seen many times when people cut their bellies here. They beat glass from the window and with this glass they cut their body. I remember one prisoner, he was in such desperation he want to commit suicide, but he cannot. He have not power. And he asked me: "Avraham, cut my belly; cut me."

I have seen when people cut part of the meat, yes, part of the meat, flesh, and try to boil it on flame with paper from the books and eat it. I have seen people open veins and put in the pot blood and put their bread—our black bread—and then eat this bread.

Really, they were not in full conscience these prisoners because they were in such desperation: from year to year, from year to year, from year to year, without hope . . . I have seen in this concentration camp No. 10 one simple boy, Nikolai Shcherbakov. He was in such desperation, that it is hard to find words. He lost his parents in the days of War II and he was without parents—how do you say? I would tell it in Russian.

Mr. BOLDYREFF. He was without parents. All his life was on the streets, and then he became thief. And when he was in concentration camp for thieves, 3,000 thieves make a tattoo on their forehead, "Slave of Communism."

I have seen people which make tattoo—rocket on the breast, atomic rocket, with words, "To U.S.S.R."

They explained me, "We want to be killed with rockets but to stop this killing in this country."

This Shcherbakov with this forehead, with this tattoo "Slave of Communism," came to our camp No. 10 and before 22d Congress of Party ask another prisoner to make tattoo on his ears: "Present to 22d Party Congress; Communist Party." And then when we was in courtyard for exercise—courtyard was with barbed wire with dogs outside, with machine guns on towers—he cut with right hand left ear and throw this ear in the face of this chief of the prison, and then with the left hand he try to cut right ear and he was not successful. Blood came to all sides, he cut big vessels, and all of the prisoners was in the blood in this courtyard. But he cut this second ear and throw it in the face of this killer.

In this camp-prison in the same situation prisoners now. Eduard Kuznetsov, Yuriy Fedorov, Murzhenko, Dymshits and hundreds others. They sit now in this concentration camp-prison for second time—in first time I were with them. I cannot understand how they survive, because I do not know how I survived. And that is why I don't understand how it is possible to come second time to this place and live without any hope.

Excuse me for my nerves. But you see that I speak not only with the words; I speak with my heart and I want with this testimony all the world try to understand me because this Nikolai Shcherbakov, this noneducated person, this man which never finished school, man without parents, this boy, when I asked him: "Why, why you make it?" He answered me: "Avraham, when I would come to the freedom and when I would tell to the people that we were in this desperation, they would not believe me. And then I would show them my head without ears. Maybe then they would believe me."

You see what the thought was in this man? He want to prove to the world all of this awful situation. Excuse me—I have my ears.

Senator GURNEY. I understand a man must be totally desperate to undertake that.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Pardon?

Senator GURNEY. I said I can understand how a man can be totally desperate to want to do that.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Thank you very much that you understand. I know that you was in the army. I know that you was in the war. I know that you man which can understand me. That is why I talk so openly.

Senator GURNEY. There is one point on these prisoners of war that we didn't discuss that I think is worthwhile discussing to complete that picture.

When you were in these prisons, these camps, did you ever run across Russian prisoners of war who had been captured by the Allied Armies?

Mr. SHIFRIN. I have seen many thousands of them.

Senator GURNEY. Why were they in Russian prisons?

Mr. SHIFRIN. You see these people became prisoners of war in the hands of Nazi in the days of the war.

Senator GURNEY. Yes.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Because these Russian Communist commanders in this Communist army, they lose army in first days of the war. You remember this. And millions of these soldiers came in the hands of the Nazis. After the war many of these people don't want to return to U.S.S.R. They didn't want to return to U.S.S.R. because they know what await them.

Senator GURNEY. You mean they would rather stay in Germany than go back to Russia?

Mr. SHIFRIN. No; when after the war you released these people from the hands of Nazis, they told you that they don't want to go to U.S.S.R. because they know—

Senator GURNEY. You mean they would rather have stayed in Germany? They would rather stay in Germany than return to Russia?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; excuse me. I cannot speak so well. Ask please, Mr. Boldyreff to translate when you cannot understand me. I want very much that you understand me to the point.

Senator GURNEY. I understand you. Go ahead.

Mr. SHIFRIN. They didn't want to return because they know what is the brutal government they have in U.S.S.R. They know that concentration camps await them. But the U.S.S.R., the Communists, and all the world want to return prisoners of war. It was very big mistake because you returned—and England and France returned—they returned these people. You brought them under machineguns to the border of U.S.S.R., and when Communists catch them, they immediately brought them to concentration camps. They explained to me, these people, that when KGB brought them to concentration camp, it was big announcement on the gates, "Motherland Awaits You." Such hypocrisy words. And when they came inside gates in another side of these gates was words, "Stay, I Would Shoot Without Warning." It was concentration camp. From these concentration camps, after investigation—they tried to show that KGB make investigation why these soldiers were caught. What was the investigation? I have heard it from many people. They asked: "Why you became prisoner of Nazi?" "I was wounded; I was in the battlefield with bullets in my legs." "We don't believe you. Why you didn't shoot this Nazi when they catch you?" "I have not gun."

"But you must catch them with your teeth."

That was answer of KGB. And once my friend told me such story that he was in so desperation in these investigations that he make a little pistol from the bread. He was officer. He made it wonderful. And when he made pistol he brought pistol to investigation room. And when investigator came to him with the fists again, he took out this pistol and told him, "Stand on the knees!" This investigator immediately stand on his knees, this KGB officer immediately stand on knees. And prisoner told him: "Kiss my feet!" And he kissed. And then this prisoner told him, "Why you don't catch me with your teeth?" [Laughter.]

They sent all of these people for 25 years to the prisons. It was—I don't know how many hundreds and hundreds and thousands of such people.

Senator GURNEY. Well, you saw them 10 years or more after the end of the war, after they had been returned, isn't that correct?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Oh, yes. They were in there 1956, 1958, and 1960. They were there in concentration camps many years, some of them 25 years.

Senator GURNEY. So these Russian soldiers—

Mr. SHIFRIN. Russian soldiers, decorated soldiers.

Senator GURNEY. These soldiers were slaves for 10, 15, 20, and 25 years after they were returned?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes; in this way they gave to them "salary" for this war.

Senator GURNEY. Do you have anything else you want to add?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes. I did not tell you about this new slavery tax for Jews when they want to go from this country to Israel. In my days, when I came from U.S.S.R. to Israel, I paid to government tax 40 rubles—half of month salary. When I came to Israel they made tax after some months in 1970 from 40 rubles in 1 day to 1,000 rubles. Now what is a thousand rubles? In the U.S.A. you have here salary of \$1,000 in the month, sometimes \$2,000 in the month. Your people can have such a salary. In U.S.S.R., salary of the worker is 100 rubles in the month. Big engineer or good physician sometimes have 120 or 150 rubles in the month. That is why 1,000 rubles, that is your year's salary without eating, without dress, without nothing. In 1971 tax was 1,000 rubles. And then from 1972 this robber have seen that all free world keep silence and made another slavery tax for Jews which want to go home, to Israel from 5,000 to 25,000 rubles, for engineers, physicians, and doctor professors. And that is why they put people in such position that they cannot pay and cannot go to Israel. With all your life you cannot have 5,000 rubles. It is impossible.

Senator GURNEY. This is in order to prevent any of them from leaving?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Yes. And now only people without education can go to Israel. They stopped educated people. And now we have cases when Jews committed suicide; they have permission to go to Israel but had no money to pay this slavery tax. And I know that my Jewish friends in U.S.S.R. try to fight now against this slavery tax and defy them and we have now victims. They put in the prisons and in the concentration camps some of Jews which try to fight against this slavery tax. I know them. They now in the prison because they told that they don't agree with this slavery tax; that there is slavery in 20th age—

Mr. BOLDYREFF. Twentieth Century.

Mr. SHIFRIN. Twentieth Century. And really that is slavery. And I think that all people with education in free world must tell to these robbers that they don't permit them to make slavery in 20th Century, and send people for this crime to the prisons. I would give you documents about these fighters.

And also, I want to tell you that when I came to your world, to the free world, I have heard about this intention to make trade with U.S.S.R. When my friends I told you shout to me by the telephone: "We are hostages in the hands of killers." They also told me by telephone conversations and in letters that free mankind should boycott trade with U.S.S.R. Only boycott of U.S.S.R. can help them.

That is only one way to help these people which live in desperation.

It would be good to tell you one sentence of Lenin: "Capitalism would sell to us—to Communists—the rope on which we would hang them." And now your Wall Street tries to sell to them rope on which they would hang you.

You, free world, built for them all these big plants for U.S.S.R. You, free world, build for U.S.S.R. all these tank plants, iron craft plants. All this is work of free mankind and then these killers from U.S.S.R. would go against you with the war.

Now you try to make trade with U.S.S.R. Wall Street discussed problem of how many billions they would loan to U.S.S.R.: \$100 billion, or \$150 billion.

I can tell you that I have heard in concentration camps sometimes from prisoners in desperation that when these Communists would catch these Americans, which helped U.S.S.R. and would send them to concentration camps, they, political prisoners, would go to the towers of concentration camps to be overseers because free world now try to help the Communists against these people which live in desperation. Simple people cannot understand your politic because you work against your interests.

Mr. SOURWINE. Who is it who says if the Communists catch the Americans and put them in concentration camps, they, the speakers, would be willing to go and be with the guards? Who said that?

Mr. SHIFRIN. I have heard these words many times from simple uneducated prisoners which were in desperation. They see that Americans try to be friendly with the Communists and Communists oppress them and they in desperation in these cells. You must understand these people which told in desperation such bitter words.

Senator GURNEY. In what way do they think that we are helping the Communists oppress them?

Mr. SHIFRIN. First, I must tell you, I am sure you must go against these killers. You must be open and brave in the struggle against communism. If you don't struggle with Communists—you help them oppress these people in U.S.S.R. I know that communism is not so powerful like you think. I have seen them all my life and you know that in my work I have known much. And I am sure that if you would understand only one simple thing: Communists understand only language of power. If you would go against them with power, they would stay on their knees.

Please remember about Cuba case when they brought to Cuba rockets. Please try to remember this case with Taiwan when they try

to catch Taiwan. Only in these two cases your United States talked openly and straight, with full power: "Stop; or it would be war." And they stopped in one day. You remember? They threw out those rockets from Cuba on the ships, these killers, and they stopped attacks in China-Taiwan immediately.

But in all the cases when you try to speak with these murderers, they understand and they could understand only one thing—their mentality is very simple—"If I would have power to kill these hateful United States—think man like Brezhnev—I would kill them without any hesitation. I speak with this America only because I not have power to kill them today. When America speak with me, I must understand that they have not power to kill me." Communists cannot understand that you are people with another mentality; that you want peace; that your war in Vietnam was a war of peace.

Believe me, that in U.S.S.R. people understand your war in Vietnam more better than your students, which make these demonstrations. In U.S.S.R. simple people understand you. But Communists understand only one thing: you, free world, didn't do nothing to help the Czechoslovakians—free world not just only the United States—free world didn't help Hungary; free world don't want to help these dissidents in U.S.S.R. which died now in the prisons, concentration camps, and mental asylums. And that is why they understood that they now have power to throw to the prisons these dissidents. They now understood that you don't want to do nothing to help these dissidents. Only because of this they now throw to the prisons so many dissidents and life of Solzhenitsyn and Sakharov in danger. Believe me. They build now new, big concentration camps. They can finish with this Jewish movement and with another dissidents now because they see that free world don't want to help to these brave people.

Mr. SOURWINE. So it is all the fault of the United States, is that what you are saying?

Mr. SHIFRIN. Not fault of the United States, excuse me. It is fault of free mankind. People in the free world don't remember about responsibility in mankind. This I must tell to free mankind because your liberals don't know socialism and communism and think that they can build socialism with human face. They make mistake. Communists would kill them first.

In Czechoslovakia intellectuals also thought that they can make communism with human face. You see their end. So it would be here when these Communists would destroy your society with all these New Lefts and new Trotskyists. Then they would have power to kill this free mankind. That is their goal.

Senator GURNEY. Well, I think I recognize their goal as closely as you do, Mr. Shifrin. Many of us in this country do.

Let me summarize by saying this, that your testimony has been most startling. It has been revealing, illuminating, shocking. It will be made a part of the public record of this committee and of the U.S. Senate. I hope many will read it. That is one of the reasons why I was so anxious to chair these hearings and be sure that you did have a chance to make your voice heard.

I share your same fear about the ultimate goal of communism. I think many of our people, not only in this country but also in the free world, are not aware of the fact that concentration camps, political

prisoners, slave camps, are pretty much the same in the Soviet Union today as they were during the reign of Stalin. That is why I think this testimony is so important.

It is hard to believe that over a century or more after most civilized countries have done away with slavery, that we have slavery in one of the most powerful nations in the world and on a scale such as never existed before at any time in the history of the world.

This I think is the important part of your testimony, your very important testimony, and I want to thank you very much for coming here. I think you have done a real service. As I said, I hope people will read this and become aware of the things that are happening in Soviet Russia and perhaps that will contribute to some change some time down the road. I certainly hope so.

Thank you very much.

Mr. SMIRIN. Thank you very much also for work of your Internal Security Commission, I have read in the U.S.S.R. many times in Russian newspapers, articles against your Internal Security Commission, and I am sure that you make big work and you try to defense your society.

I told you all this because I am sure that only with all the power of all the free mankind, we can make something, do something with these murderers who try to kill free people on all the Earth.

Thank you very much.

Senator GURNEY. Your comment about their awareness of what goes on in this country by the way of news dissemination in the U.S.S.R. is certainly correct. I recall when I first came to Congress as a young Congressman about 10 years ago—as you know, I come from Florida—this I think was back in 1963—and I made some comment about the Soviet threat to Cuba. The next day or 2 days after that, it was picked up in Prague, I believe, and they commented on it. They commented on this crazy man from Florida and what he had to say about what was going on in Cuba. So I am aware of the fact that shedding light and publicity on what the Soviets are doing is important in this country and that the Soviets are aware of it and they do react to it.

Thank you very much.

The hearing of the subcommittee is adjourned.

[Whereupon, at 3:30 p.m., the subcommittee recessed, subject to the call of the Chair.]

Approved For Release 2005/06/22 : CIA-RDP75B00380R000300010086-8

Approved For Release 2005/06/22 : CIA-RDP75B00380R000300010086-8

APPENDIX

SOME BIOGRAPHIES OF SOVIET POLITICAL PRISONERS

[From Grani, Nos. 79, 80, 82 and 84]

1. IVANOV, Nikolay Viktorovich, b. 1937, art historian, instructor at the Leningrad State University. Sentenced 5 Apr 68 in Leningrad to 6 years in a strict regime labor camp for his membership in the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. Is serving his sentence in Dubrovlag. (Grani No. 82, p. 120)

2. KONOSOV, Mikhail Borisovich, born 1937, metal worker at Lengaz, poet, student by correspondence at the M. Gorkiy Literary Institute in Leningrad. Sentenced 5 Apr 68 in Leningrad to 4 years in a strict regime labor camp for his membership in the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. Served his sentence in Dubrovlag. Released upon completion of sentence. In February 1971 registered for residence at the city of Luga in the Leningradskaya oblast. (Grani No. 82, p. 120)

3. BOCHEVAROV, Georgiy Nikolaevich, b. 1935, engineer-economist. Sentenced at the 5 Apr 68 Leningrad trial to two and a half years in a strict labor camp for his membership in the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. Served his sentence at Dubrovlag. Released after serving his time. (Grani No. 82, p. 121)

4. SLUTSKIY, Boris Abramovich, b. 7 May 1919 in Slavyansk (Donbass), studied in Moscow at the Law Institute and the M. Gorkiy Literary Institute. Member of the Communist Party since 1943. First poems published in 1941. Other works published in 1953, 1955, 1961, 1964. Much work censored and remains unpublished. (Grani No. 82, p. 121)

5. BOGORAZ-BRUKHMAN, Larisa Iosifovna, b. May 8, 1929 in Kharkov. Married Yu. Daniel in 1950. Participated actively in the defense of her arrested husband, and appeared in the defense of Yu. Galanskov, A. Ginzburg, A. Dobrovolskiy and V. Lashkova. Also appeared in the defense of Anatoliy Marchenko and her sister Irina Belogorodskaya. Arrested and beaten for her participation in a demonstration protesting the entry of Soviet troops into Czechoslovakia and sentenced to 4 years of exile which she served in the Yakutskaya oblast. According to foreign sources, was released conditionally in December 1971 before completing her term and sent to Kaluga where her husband settled upon his release from camp. (Grani, No. 82, p. 125)

6. NAGORNIY, Valeriy, b. 1938, engineer with the Leningrad Institute of Precision Mechanics and Optics. Sentenced at the Leningrad trial of 5 Apr 68 to 3 years in a strict regime camp for his membership in the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. Served his sentence at Dubrovlag. Released March 1970 upon completion of term.

7. BARANOV, Yurity Petrovich, b. 1938, electronic engineer at the Clinic of Hospital Surgery of the First Leningrad Medical Institute. Sentenced at the Leningrad 5 Apr 68 trial to 3 years in a strict regime camp for his participation in the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. Served his sentence at Dubrovlag. Released 10 Feb 1970. Died shortly afterwards. (Grani, No. 82)

8. SUDAREV, Anatoliy, b. 1939, translator, graduated from the Leningrad State University. Sentenced at the Leningrad 5 Apr 68 trial to 2 years in a strict regime labor camp. Served his time in Dubrovlag, whereupon released in March 1970. (Grani, number and page not given)

9. DOL'NIK, Solomon Borisovich, b. circa 1900. Arrested early in 1966 in Moscow and accused of distributing Zionist and anti-Soviet literature. Served time in labor camps in Mordovia. Upon release immigrated to Israel with his wife. (Grani, number and page not given)

10. GENDLER, Yuriy L., born 1936. Arrested 1 Aug 1968 for planning to express his sympathy to Czechoslovakia. Sentenced in Dec. 1968 to 3 years in

a strict regime labor camp. Was to be released in August 1971 upon completion of term. (Grani, number and page not given)

11. VERETENOV, Vladimir, born 1936, chemist from Tomsk. Graduated Leningrad State University. Arrested for his participation in the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. Sentenced 5 April 1968 to 2 years in a strict regime labor camp. Served his sentence in Dubrovlag. Released March 1969 upon completion of term. (Grani, number and page not given)

12. GABAY, Il'ya Yankelovich, born 1925, philologist, poet, scriptwriter, teacher, editor. Author of "At the Closed Doors of an Open Court" and many other works challenging the arrest and imprisonment of Soviet dissidents. Arrested 19 May 1970 for possession of documents regarding the struggle of the Crimean Tatars for their rights. Sentenced to 3 years in a standard regime labor camp. His address: Kemerovo 28, p/ya 1612/40, br. 44. (Grani, number and page not given)

13. KRASIN, Viktor, born 1929, economist, worked at the Central Economics and Mathematics Institute. A graduate of Stalinist labor camps. Member of the Action Group for the Defense of Civil Rights in the USSR. Active protester of Stalinism. Author of numerous documents on civil rights in USSR and countries of the Soviet bloc. Arrested 20 Dec 1969, tried on 23 Dec 1969 and sentenced to 5 years of exile in the Krasnoyarskiy kray. Address: Eniseyskiy rayon Makovskoye village, general delivery. (Grani, p. 92)

14. TALANTOV, Boris Vladimirovich, born 1903, son of a priest. Father and brother perished in labor camps. Graduated Pedagogical Institute in Kirov. Taught mathematics. Long record of dissent and struggle for civil rights and freedom of religion. After many years of persecution, finally arrested in Kirov on 12 June 1969, tried on 1 Sept 1969 and sentenced to 2 years in a concentration camp. As of 6 Nov 1970 in a prison hospital in Kirov. Died on 4 Jan 1971 of heart attack. (Grani, No. 79)

15. SHAVROV, Vadim, born 1924, Moscovite, from the family of an old bolshevik. Member of VLKSM and graduate of military-naval school. Arrested in 1948 with his father and sentenced to 10 years. While in camp in 1954 became religious. After rehabilitation completed a religious seminary. A friend and co-author of A. Levitin. (Grani, No. 79)

16. BURMISTROVICH, Il'ya Evseevich, born 1938, candidate of physical-mathematics sciences, author of 9 scientific works; had been a senior member of the staff of the Academy of Pedagogical Sciences. Arrested 16 May 1968. Tried in Moscow 21 May 1969. Sentenced to 3 years in standard regime corrective labor camps. Sentenced for duplicating and distributing the works of Sinyavskiy and Daniel, information on the trial of Yu. Galanskov and A. Ginzburg, and Samizdat materials. At present in a concentration camp. Address: Krasnoyarskiy kray, st. N. Ingash, p/ya 283/1-5-3. (Grani, p. 95)

17. KUSHEV, Evgeniy Igorevich, born 1947, a Moscovite, from the family of artists. Author of the poem "Decembrists", one of the founders of "The Ryleyv Club", an editor of the literary magazine "Russkoye Slovo" (Russian Word) and the magazine "Sotsializm i Demokratiya" (Socialism and Democracy). Arrested and spent some time in a mental hospital for his participation in a demonstration protesting the arrest of Sinyavskiy and Daniel. Met A. Krasnov-Levitin in 1965 (his godfather when Kushev became baptized). Arrested and sentenced to 7 months for his participation on 22 Jan 1967 in a demonstration protesting the arrest of Yu. Galanskov, A. Dobrovol'skiy etc. Tried together with V. Bukovsky and V. Delone on 30 Aug-1 Sept, 1967 and sentenced conditionally to 1 year of deprivation of freedom. Testified on the behalf of Yu. Galanskov, A. Ginzburg, A. Dobrovol'skiy and V. Lashkova on 8 Jan 1968 at their trial. One of the authors of the magazine "Phoenix-66". (Grani, p. 95)

18. GINZBURG, Aleksandr Ie'ich, born in 1936, Moscovite, poet, publicist. Edited 3 issues of an underground literary youth magazine "Sintaksis"; arrested and sentenced to 2 years in a concentration camp for this work. Arrested again in 1964 for allegedly harboring anti-Soviet material. Following the arrest of Sinyavskiy and Daniel in 1965, compiled a "White Book on the Trial of Sinyavskiy and Daniel" during 1966 and sent copies to the KGB, to members of the Supreme Soviet, N. Podgornyy and other government officials. Arrested, tried, and sentenced on 8 Jan 1968 to 5 years in a strict regime camp for demonstrating on behalf of V. Lashkova, Yu. Galanskov, and A. Dobrovol'skiy. While in camp participated in a variety of protest acts. Tried on 18 Aug 1970 in Yavas for these protests, and

moved from Dubrovlag to the Vladimirskaia prison [reputedly one of the most terrible], operating under strict regime conditions. (Grani, no. 79, p. 100)

19. BOGACH, Nikolay Pavlovich, b. 1944 in the Kuban. While a student of the Nikolayev Agricultural Technicum tried to establish the "Organization for Social Justice", for which in the spring of 1969 he was sentenced by the Nikolayev City Court to 4 years at a correctional strict regime labor camp; the term was subsequently reduced to 3 years. (Grani, no. 84 p. 91)

20. VASILYAN, Ovik M., b. 1936, an Armenian, non-party. Engineer of the Erevan Electric Lamp Plant. Sentenced by the Supreme Court of the Armenian SSR in February 1969 to 6 years in a corrective labor camp; accused of criticizing life under the Soviets, of spreading slanderous information on the domestic and foreign policy of the USSR, of agitating for an independent Armenia, etc. In camp participated in strikes against brutalities inflicted by camp guards and administration. (Grani, no. 84, p. 91)

21. GYUNASHYAN, Shirak, b. 1939, an Armenian, non-party. Engineer and designer. Sentenced in Feb 1969 by the Supreme Court of the Armenian SSR together with O. M. Vasilyan for the same reasons to 4 years. (Grani no. 84, p. 92)

22. KHACHATRYAN, Ayk Karaevich, b. 1920, Armenian, non-party. Artist-painter. Sentenced by the Supreme Court of the Armenian SSR to 5 years according to article 70. (Grani, no. 84, p. 92)

23. FEDOROV, Yuriy Ivanovich, b. 1936, from Leningrad. Worked with the Komsomol, then the MVD, then a captain in the police force. Sentenced in July 1969 by the Leningrad City Court to 6 years for illegally organizing the "Union of Communists". After a two-week stay in solitary confinement in Dubrovlag, transferred to a camp in Mordovia (17-a, Ozernee). In 1971 participated in a hunger strike on Human Rights day, demanding amnesty for all political prisoners. (Grani, no. 84, p. 92)

24. GREBENSIIKHOKOV, Vasily Fedorovich, "Chronicle", No. 21, 1971 calls him Grebenshchikov, Viktor Orestovich and states that he is from Alma-Ata. Arrested on 27 June 1967 for his attempt to throw onto the grounds of the American Embassy a typed text of his work, "History of the collectivization of agriculture in the USSR". Released 26 June 1971 from a camp in Mordovia. (Grani, no. 84, p. 92)

25. IVANOV, Yuriy Evgenevich, b. 1927, of Leningrad, son of the artist-painter E. Sivers, shot in 1938 and rehabilitated after his death. While attending the Academy of Arts, arrested in 1947, with two others, for not attending lectures on Marxism-Leninism. Sentenced without trial to 10 years in a concentration camp. After 1 year, acquitted and released. Arrested again in 1955, accused of spreading anti-Soviet literature, etc. Sent to work on the construction of the Kuybyshev Hydroelectric Power Station where at that time approximately 8,000 prisoners, charged according to Article 58 (same as Ivanov), were working. Was not released as many others after Stalin's death; caught during an attempt to escape and sentenced to another 10 years. Spent 1 year at the Vladimirskaia prison, in solitary confinement. In 1963 again sentenced for another 10 years for spreading "anti-Soviet propaganda" in the camp. Of these spent 3 years at the Vladimirskaia prison, then 2½ years in a special regime camp (camp 10 in Dubrovlag). In the summer of 1968 transferred to strict regime camp no. 11, then 4 months in solitary confinement at the Saransk KGB, then camp 17 at Dubrovlag, etc. etc. In 1969 an exhibition of his painting was held in London. According to rumors he was released from the Mordovian camps in advance of his term. Present address unknown. (Grani, no. 84, p. 94)

26. KALNYN'SH, Viktor Yanovich, b., 1936, Latvian. Graduated Moscow Pedagogical Institute. Journalist. Arrested 18 Apr 1962. Accused of membership in an "underground anti-Soviet, nationalistic organization", the "Baltic Federation". Sentenced to 10 years in labor camps. The sentence was protested by the Procurator of the Latvian SSR, the Procurator General of the USSR, and numerous Latvian intellectuals, but to no avail. Sent to camp 17-a in Mordovia. Participated in various camp protests and punished accordingly. In 1969 transferred to BUR for protesting the transfer of Yu. Daniel and V. Ronkin to the Vladimirskaia prison. (Grani, No. 84, p. 95)

27. CHERDYNTSEV, Ivan Alekseevich, b. 1938. Teacher. In 1964 was tried by the Supreme Court of the Moldavian SSR for participating in the organization of the "Democratic Union of Socialists" and sentenced to 6 years in a labor camp; received another 4 years while in camp. In Sept 1971 participated in a hunger strike at camp 19 in Dubrovlag. His mother, Efrosiniya Nesterovna [Cherdyntseva] lives at No. 84 Krasin St., Petropavlovsk, Kazakh SSR.

28. IVANOV, Anatoliy M. (Real name—Novogodniyy), Moscovite, poet. Arrested 6 Oct 1961 together with V. Osipov and E. Kuznetsov for their participation in the magazine "Phoenix-61". Sentenced by the Moscow City Court on 9 Feb 62 to 7 years in a intensified regime labor camp. Served his sentence in labor camps in Mordovia. Released in October 1968. According to Osipov, spent part of his sentence in a mental hospital.

29. KHAUSTOV, Viktor Aleksandrovich, b. 1938, Moscovite, poet, member of SMOG, an upholsterer by trade. Participated in the 22 Jan 67 demonstration protesting the arrest of V. Lashkova, Yu. Galanskov, and A. Dobrovol'skiy for their work on the magazine "Phoenix-66". Arrested and sentenced by the Moscow City Court to 3 years in an intensified regime camp. Served his term in labor camps in the Orenburg oblast. Released in Jan 1970. (Grani, no. 80, p. 141)

30. KUZNETSOV, Eduard Samuilovich, b. 1941, Moscovite, student of philosophy at the Moscow State University. Arrested along with V. Osipov and A. Ivanov for their work on the magazine "Feniks-61". Sentenced by the Moscow City Court to 7 years in an intensified regime labor camp. Served his term first in camps in Mordovia, then in the Vladimirskaia prison. Released in October 1968. Settled in Riga and married S. Zalmanson. On 15 June 70 together with his wife and 9 other friends apprehended by the KGB and accused of an attempt to hijack an airplane from the "Smolone" airport in Leningrad. Kuznetsov and Dymshits were sentenced to be shot, the others got 4 to 15 years in concentration camps. As a result of protests the world over, Kuznetsov's and Dymshits' sentences were changed to 10 years in concentration camps. Kuznetsov arrived in June 1971 at camp 10 (Station Udarnaya Leply), a special regime camp, i.e. living in a prison and going out to work. (Grani, no. 80, p. 141)

31. BOKSHEIN, Il'ya Veniaminovich, Moscovite, spinal tuberculosis since childhood, student at the Library Institute, poet. Arrested 6 Aug 61. Sentenced by the Moscow City Court to 5 years in concentration camps for his participation in "Phoenix-61". Released after serving his sentence. (Grani, 80, p. 142)

32. GEDONIY, Aleksandr Gidoni. A member of the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of Peoples, denounced this organization to the KGB. Remained in the organization at the instruction of the KGB until the first arrests of its members in Feb-Mar 1967 and their trial in Nov 67-Apr 68 at which he appeared as witness for the prosecution. (Grani, No. 80, p. 142)

33. BORODIN, Leonid Ivanovich. B. in Irkutsk. Student at the Irkutsk University. First arrested in 1956 for membership in an illegal student group, "Free Speech" and for listening to the radio station "Baikal". Expelled from the University and the Komsomol. Later finished the University. Specialty—historian of education. The last few years was director of a secondary school in the Luzhskiy rayon in Leningrad oblast. In 1964 established the "Democratic Party". In 1965 became a member of the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of Peoples. Arrested in Feb-Mar 1967. Sentenced by the Leningrad City Court in 1968 to 6 years in strict regime camps. Served his sentence in the camps of Mordovia. While in camp participated in a variety of protests. Address: Vladimir-Oblastnoy, p/ya OD/1-st. 2. (Grani, no. 80, p. 143)

34. IVOVLOV, Vladimir, b. 1937, economist. Member of the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of Peoples. Sentenced by the Leningrad City Court in 1968 to 6 years in a strict regime labor camp. Served his sentence in Mordovian camps. Address: Mordovskaya ASSR, Potma, p/o Yavas, p/ya ZhKh 385/11. (Grani, no. 80, p. 143)

35. OGURTSOV, Igor Vyacheslavovich, b. 1938/9, philologist, translator (Japanese). Main leader of the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. Arrested Feb-Mar 1967. Sentenced in Nov 1967 to 15 years: 5 years in prison, 10 years in a strict regime camp. Place of incarceration—the Vladimirskaia prison. Address: Vladimirskaia oblast, p/ya OD/1-st. 2. (Grani, No. 80, p. 144)

36. SADO, Mikhail Yukhanovich, b. 1934 in Leningrad into a family of boot-blacks. Of Assyrian origin. Grandfather, father, two uncles persecuted during the 1930s, with only father, who spent 16 years in prisons and labor camps, surviving. Sado himself, one of the founders and one of the four principal leaders of the All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of Peoples. Arrested in Leningrad in 1967 for his political activities. Sentenced to 13 years: 5 years in prison and 7 years in strict regime concentration camps. First— the Vladimirskaia prison, then labor camps in Mordovia. According to latest information he is serving his sentence at camp 17-a. Address: Mordovskaya ASSR, p/o Ozernyy, p/ya ZhKh 385/17-a. (Grani, No. 80, p. 144)

37. VAGIN, Evgeniy Aleksandrovich, b. 1938/39, literary historian and editor of note. One of the four leaders of the All-Russian Christian Social Union for the Liberation of the People. Arrested in 1967. Sentenced in Nov 67 to 10 years: 2 years in the Vladimirskaia prison and 8 years in strict regime labor camps in Mordovia. Address: Mordovskaya ASSR, st. Potma, p/o Yavas, p/ya ZhZh 385/11. (Grani, no. 80, p. 145)

38. AVEROCHKIN, Boris, b. 1940, lawyer. One of the four principal leaders of the All-Russian Christian Social Union for the Liberation of People. Arrested in 1967. Sentenced by the Leningrad City Court in Nov 67 to 8 years in strict regime camps. Serving his sentence in camps in Mordovia. Address: Mordovskaya ASSR, st. Potma, p/o Yavas, p/ya ZhZh 385/11. (Grani no. 80, p. 145)

39. PLATONOV, Vyacheslav, b. 1941 in Leningrad in a workers family. Studied at the Leningrad State University. Assistant in the African Dept. Upon return from a tour of duty in Ethiopia, arrested by the KGB for active membership in the All-Russian Christian Social Union for the Liberation of the People. Sentenced by the Leningrad City Court to 7 years in a strict regime camp. Serving his sentence in Mordovia. Participated in a series of protests while in camp. According to latest information, is at camp 17-a. Address: Mordovskaya ASSR, p/o Ozernyy, p/ya ZhZh 385 17-a. (Grani, No. 80, p. 146)

40. KRASNOPEVTSEV, Lev. Moscovite, studied at Moscow State University, member of "Union of Patriots of Russia" (illegal Marxist group). Arrested in connection with the trial of the Moscow University Group on 30 Aug 1957. Sentenced by the Moscow City Court to 10 years of strict regime camp. Served his sentence in Mordovian camps. Released 30 Aug 1967. (Grani no. 80, p. 146)

41. RENDEL', Leonid A., Moscovite, historian, studied at the Moscow State Univ. Member of the "Union of Patriots of Russia". Arrested in connection with the trial of the Moscow University Group on 30 Aug 1957. In Feb 58, together with Krasnopevtsev sentenced to 10 years in a strict regime camp. Served in Mordovian camps. Released 30 Aug 67, but remained until the end of 1968 under administrative supervision for "repeated disobedience of camp regulations and for harboring anti-Soviet convictions". (Grani, no. 80, p. 146)

42. OBUSHENKOV, N. G., CHESHKOV, M. AND SEMINENKO, M., Moscovites, former students at the Moscow State University and members of the "Union of Patriots of Russia". Arrested in Moscow 30 Aug 1957, sentenced by the Moscow City Court in Feb 1958 to 10 years in strict regime labor camps. Served their sentences in Mordovian camps, together with Krasnopevtsev and Rendel. Released 30 Aug 67. (Grani, no. 80, p. 146)

43. SINYAVSKIY, Andrey Donatovich, b. 1925 in Moscow. Writer and literary critic. Graduate of Moscow State University. Father arrested in 1951, at which time son's diary confiscated. In 1952 appointed senior associate in Soviet Literature Section at the Institute of World Literature. In 1956 wrote his now famous "The Trial Goes On", "What is Social Realism", in 1961-62 a novel "Lyubimov". Towards the end of 1956 began sending his works abroad, where they were published under the pseudonym of Abram Terts. In 1961 became a member of the Union of (Soviet) Writers. On 8 Sept 1965 arrested by KGB in Moscow. Tried together with Yu. Daniel (Sept-Dec 1966). Sentenced by the Supreme Court of the RSFSR to 7 years in strict regime labor camps for publishing "anti-Soviet" works abroad. Serving his sentence at camp no. 11 in Mordovia. (Grani, No. 80, p. 147)

44. DANIEL', Yuliy Markovich, b. in Moscow in 1925, into the family of a well known Jewish writer, Mark Daniel (literary pseudonym). Severely wounded in 1944 during the war. Studied at Kharkov University, then at the Philology Department of the Moscow Regional Pedagogical Institute. Taught for 6 years. In 1951 married Larisa Bogoraz. Began writing in 1952. First novel, "Escape", published by "Detgiz" (Soviet publishers of children's literature), but not allowed to be sold. Other works followed. Most works eventually published in the USA by "Inter-Language Literary Associates". Beginning with 1957 earned his living by translating poetry: approximately 40 volumes of his translated works appeared before his arrest. On 12 Sept 1965 arrested in Moscow by KGB. Accused of anti-Soviet propaganda. Tried together with Sinyavskiy Sept-Dec 1966. Sentenced by the Supreme Court of RSFSR to 5 years in a strict regime camp. Served his time in Mordovian camps. In 1968, his wife Larisa Bogoraz, arrested and sentenced to 4 years of exile for demonstrating against the entry of Soviet troops into Czechoslovakia. Served her time in the Irkutskaya oblast [see her biography, No. 5 of this report]. While in camp Yu. Daniel continued to write and to protest the cruelties and unfairness of the camp administration toward other prisoners.

Participated in hunger strikes, appeals, and complaints. In July 1969, together with Ronkin tried for his activities and sentenced to serve the remainder of his term at the Vladimirskaya prison, to which duly transferred. Released on 12 Sept 1970. Denied right to live in Moscow. Settled in Kaluga. Addressed an appeal to the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet for the release of A. Sinyavskiy. (Grani, no. 80, p. 348-150)

45. MARCHENKO, Anatoliy Tikhonovich, b. 1938 in Siberia. A driller by profession. While working on the construction of the Karagands Hydroelectric Power Station, arrested in a local brawl and sentenced to a labor camp in the Karaganda oblast. On the way to the camp escaped, but was caught 40 km from the Iranian border. Accused by the KGB of treachery to the Motherland. After 5 months of solitary confinement, the Supreme Court of the Turkmen SSR sentenced him to 6 years in a concentration camp for political prisoners. Served his sentence in Mordovia. For attempted escape, transferred to the Vladimirskaya prison, then returned to a camp in Mordovia. In camp suffered terrible physical hardship. Physically was reduced to an invalid, spiritually transformed into a politically conscious fighter. While in camp started writing about the life of political prisoners there and of conditions at the Vladimirskaya prison. In 1967 finished "My Testimony", which was immediately published and distributed by Samizdat. The book was written while he was for 5 months at a hospital undergoing two very serious operations and the next 5 months while he was looking for work and moving from one town to another: Kursk, Kaluga, Maloyaroslavets, Vladimir, Kalinin, Barabinsk (Siberia) and finally the town of Aleksandrov in the Vladimirskaya oblast, where he has lived since May 1968, working in Moscow as a stevedore, despite his extremely poor health—no other work was available to him. Despite various acts of persecution by the KGB, continued his stand against political injustice and repression. One month before the entry of Soviet troops into Czechoslovakia, addressed a letter to the leading Czech newspapers, praising Czechoslovakia for its political policies, and warning of possible intervention by the USSR. Two days later, on 29 July 1968, he was grabbed on his way to work, arrested on false charges, and sent to the Butyrskaya prison. His arrest and imprisonment initiated a series of protests on the part of many, including Larisa Daniel-Bogoraz, N. Gorbanevskaya, P. Litvinov, V. Krasin, Academician Sakharov. More than 60 letters of protest were sent. Samizdat published a statement summarizing his case. Larisa Daniel's sister, engineer I. Belogorodskaya, arrested in connection with Marchenko's case, was sentenced to 1 year in a concentration camp, which she spent in Mordovia—released 8 Aug. 1969. Marchenko himself was sentenced to 1 year in a strict regime camp. In Dec. 1968 after a long march, he arrived at a concentration camp in the Permskaya oblast. Despite all medical evidence as to his extremely bad health he was sent to work on construction jobs of great hardship. When his term was almost completed the Perm procurature instigated a new case against him and he was transferred to the prison in Solikamsk. On 20 May 69, the USSR Human Rights Committee sent a letter, signed by 54 petitioners, to the United Nations, in defense of political prisoners in the USSR, including Marchenko and Belogorodskaya. But the U.N. staff in Moscow refused to accept the letter on the pretext that it was from private persons. On 30 June 1969, a second letter was sent regarding Marchenko and the use of mental hospitals for dissenters. A new trial was held on Marchenko on 22 Aug. 1969 in the village of Nyrob on the camp grounds. False witnesses were called; Marchenko was sentenced to another 2 years in a strict regime camp. Though the sentence was passed in Sept. 1969, Marchenko remained at the Solikamsk prison until Feb. 1970, at which time he was transferred to a camp at the following address: Perm oblast, Solikamsk region, XXX p/o Krasnyy bereg, uch. AM 241/7-8.

According to the latest information, he was transferred by the camp administration in Feb-Mar 1970, with temperatures ranging 45-50°C below zero, [54-60° F] into a tent, and assigned, despite his state of health—bleeding ulcers, anemia, terrible headaches due to unattended meningitis while at camp, two serious operations (one of them brain surgery)—to unloading firewood for train engines and digging foundation pits. He was refused a visit from his mother and lawyer, deprived of letters and books, paper, pen and even a text-book in physics, as having no "politically educational value". His health has greatly deteriorated, and in addition to everything else he has developed hypertension. His friends fear that he may not survive.

But his dream—for which he is paying with his life—has come true: his book "My Testimony", through Samizdat, appeared abroad, where it was published both in Russian and in all the major languages of the world.

Marchenko was released upon the expiration of his term. (Grani, No. 80, pp. 154-157)

46. RONKIN, Valeriy Efimovich, b. 1936 in Murmansk, in the family of a workman. Engineer. Studied at the Leningrad Technological Institute. Worked on the construction of petroleum plants throughout the USSR, thereafter at the Institute for Synthetic Rubber in Leningrad. In 1963, together with S. Khakhaev wrote the book "From the Dictatorship of Bureaucracy to the Dictatorship of the Proletariat". Both Ronkin and Khakhaev are Marxists and came out for "true Marxism against its perversion". Criticized the party and its leadership as responsible for the tragedy of the Stalinist dictatorship. Khakhaev and Ronkin formed a group with several others, called "Union of Communards", which issued two issues of a typewritten magazine, the "Bell" ("Kolokol"). Arrested on 12 June 1965 and sentenced by the Leningrad City Court to 7 years in a strict regime labor camp. Served his sentence in Mordovia. In camp participated in various acts of protest, including hunger strikes, and appeals to the higher authorities. Like Yu. Daniel continuously and systematically fought for the rights of prisoners, thus gaining the animosity of both the camp administrators and the higher authorities. Due to these activities both Ronkin and Daniel were tried on 7 July 1969 and sentenced to serve out the remainder of their terms in the Vladimirskaya prison. According to latest reports, Ronkin, together with 27 other prisoners, took part in a hunger strike to mark the approaching Constitution Day and Human Rights Day, and to protest the unbearable conditions of life in labor camps. His address is: Vladimirskaya oblast p/ya OD/1—st. 2. (Grani, no. 80, pp. 157-159)

47. KHAKHAEV, Sergey. Formerly student at the Leningrad Technological Institute and member of the All-Union Lenin Young Communist League. In 1963, together with Ronkin wrote the book "From the Dictatorship of Bureaucracy to the Dictatorship of the Proletariat"; also articles criticizing Stalinism, the party, and the leadership. Together with Ronkin and others formed the circle "Union of Communards" and the magazine "Bell" ("Kolokol"). Arrested 12 June 1965 together with Ronkin, and sentenced by the Leningrad City Court to 7 years in a strict regime camp, followed by 3 years of exile. (See Ronkin's biography for additional details.) Is serving his sentence in a camp in Mordovia. (Grani, no. 80, p. 159)

48. DRAGOSH, Nikolay Fedorovich, b. 1922, from Odessa, non-party. Graduated the Odessa University. Was director of a school for working youth in the Tarutinskiy region of the Odessa oblast, and taught mathematics. Accused by the Supreme Court of the Moldavian SSR in 1964 for establishing the "Democratic Union of Socialists" and for printing a brochure "Truth to the People". Sentenced to 7 years in a strict regime camp. Served his sentence in Mordovian camps. Transferred to the Vladimirskaya prison for his participation in a hunger strike at the camp in the summer of 1970. While at the Vladimirskaya prison again participated in a hunger strike to mark Constitution Day and Human Rights Day, celebrated Oct 5-10, 1970. Released 15 May 1971. (Grani, no. 80, p. 160)

49. ZAITSEV, Valeriy. Ship's mechanic (naval engineer?) on a repair-and-rescue ship. Arrested in 1962 with 7 other crew members of whom nothing is known, for trying to escape to America while near the coast of Alaska. Sentenced to 10 years. Serving his sentence in Mordovia. (Grani, no. 80, p. 160)

50. BERG-KHAYMOVICH, Yakov, metal worker, Moscovite, non-party. Accused by the Moscow City Court of an attempt to establish an illegal printing shop (together with V. Aydov). Sentenced in 1968 to 7 years of deprivation of freedom. Served his sentence in Mordovian camps. In 1969 transferred to the Vladimirskaya prison for participating in protests and hunger strikes, where he again, together with 27 others, participated in a hunger strike to mark Constitution Day and Human Rights Day. His address: Vladimirskaya oblast, p/ya OD/1 st. 2. (Grani, no. 80, p. 160)

51. AYDOV, Vyacheslav. Accused of an attempt (together with Berg) to establish an illegal printing shop. Served his sentence in Mordovian camps. Participated in hunger strikes in Nov. 1969. Took part in another three-day strike in 4 May 1970 to protest the killing of a mentally ill prisoner by the guards. Together with other prisoners demanded that the procurator general investigate the killing. For this was transferred to the Vladimirskaya prison where he together with 27 others participated in a hunger strike to mark Constitution Day and Human Rights Day. His address: Vladimirskaya oblast, p/ya OD/1—st. 2. (Grani, no. 80, p. 160-161)

52. MOSHIKOV, Yuriy. Probably MOSHKOV, Sergey. B. 1939 into a family of physicians in the village of Nadel'ye in the Leningrad oblast. Graduated from the School of Biology of the Leningrad State University. Became a member of the

illegal circle "Union of Communards". Arrested 12 June 65 in connection with the case of "Union of Communards" and the magazine "Bell" ("Kolokol") (together with V. Ronkin, S. Khakhaev, and others. See Ronkin's biography for details.). In the summer of 1965 sentenced by the Leningrad City Court to 4 years in a strict regime camp. Served his sentence in Mordovia together with Ronkin, Yu. Daniel, and others. Together with Daniel and Ronkin went on a 10-day hunger strike in Feb. 1968, and then came out in the defense of A. Ginzburg who was on a hunger strike in May-June 1969. Released 12 June 1969. (Grani, no. 80, p. 161)

53. KHANZHENKOV, Sergey. Born 1942 in Belorussia. Completed 4 years at the Belorussian Polytechnical Institute. Arrested in 1963. Accused of being a traitor to his country: of attempting to establish anti-Soviet organizations and of the preparation of diversionary tactics. Sentenced to 10 years in a strict regime camp. Served his sentence in a camp in Mordovia. (Grani, no. 80, p. 161)

54. TARNAVSKIY, Nikolay Andreyevich. Born 1940. Ukrainian by origin, a native of the Kirovogradskaya oblast. Secondary school teacher in a school where Dragosh [see biographical note] was the director. Arrested in Odessa and accused by the Supreme Court of the Moldavian SSR in the same case as Dragosh. Sentenced to 7 years in a strict regime camp. Served his sentence in camps in Mordovia. Participated in hunger strikes in Nov 1969 and in the summer of 1970. On 13 July 70 transferred to the Vladimirskaia prison, where together with 27 others conducted a hunger strike to mark Constitution Day and Human Rights Day. Released 19 May 1971. (Grani, no. 80, p. 162)

YURI ANDREYEVICH TREGUBOV—writer, born in 1913 in St. Petersburg, Russia. Emigrated with his parents to Berlin, Germany, in 1926, where he completed his education. In 1934 he joined the NTS. In October 1944 he became aide-de-camp to General Trukhin, Chief of Staff of the Vlasov Army. Gen. Trukhin, as well as Gen. Meandrov, Commander of the Second Vlasov Division—formerly both senior Red Army officers—were also NTS members. They were forcibly delivered by the Americans to the Soviet Union, where they were executed together with General Vlasov.

After the capitulation of Nazi Germany, Tregubov returned to West Berlin where he worked actively for the NTS. On September 19, 1947, he was kidnapped by the KGB. After three years of captivity in the Lubyanka, Lefortovo and Butyrskaya prisons, he was tried and condemned to death. Later the death sentence was commuted and he was sent to serve 25 years in concentration camps. He worked two years in the Vorkuta mines, then in Dubrovlag and Potma. After the establishment of diplomatic relations between West Germany and the USSR, Tregubov, as a German citizen, was repatriated with German POWs.

Mr. Tregubov has written several books, describing his experiences in the concentration camps and the conditions of life in the Soviet Union.

VALERY PETROVIC TREMMEL was a teacher by profession. He joined the NTS in Russia. To avoid reprisals by the Gestapo for having provided shelter and saved a number of Jewish children, whose parents were exterminated by the Nazis in the occupied territories of Russia, V. Tremmel, through underground channels, escaped to Poland. In 1954 he worked for NTS in Lintz (Austria). On October 20, 1954 three Soviet agents broke into his apartment, drugged him, and abducted him to Urfar (Soviet zone of Austria). The circumstances of his abduction were investigated by the American authorities and reported to the State Department by the First Secretary of the American Embassy in Vienna, Mr. M. Gordon Knoeks.

According to some unconfirmed information V. Tremmel has died in Soviet concentration camps.

NIKOLAY SERGEYEVICH KOZOREZ, born in 1898 in Kremenchug. As an officer he fought in World War I and in the White Russian Army against the Bolsheviks. In 1920 he emigrated to Yugoslavia, where he received his engineering degree at the Belgrade University. A member of NTS since the early 1930's, he was forcibly repatriated by the British in 1945 from Lintz, Austria, with a large group of Cossaks. Kozorez has spent 11 years in Soviet concentration camps of Vorkuta, Yaya, Inta, Mordovia, Potma, and Bykov.

DR. ALEXANDER RUDOLFOVICH TRUSHNOVICH was born in 1893 in Postojna, Slovenia, then part of the Austro-Hungarian Empire. In 1914 as a graduate medical student he was mobilized and sent to the front, where in 1915 he succeeded to defect to the Russians and joined the First Serbian Volunteer Division to fight for the liberation of his native land. After the Bolshevik Revolution in Russia, Dr. Trushnovich fought in the Civil War in the White Russian Army. Twice wounded, he was awarded several medals for bravery. In 1920 his unit was encircled and captured by the Reds, and as an officer he was condemned to be shot. Luckily some Serbian soldiers who served under his command in World War I protested and he was released. To avoid further persecution by the Cheka (Secret Police) Dr. Trushnovich assumed the maiden name of his mother, and in 1927 completed his medical training at the Kubansky Medical Institute. In 1934 he finally succeeded in obtaining an exit visa to return to his native Yugoslavia. In Yugoslavia he worked as a physician and joined the NTS. After the Nazi invasion of Yugoslavia, the NTS went underground, and Dr. Trushnovich directed its operations in that country until September 1944 when he joined the Vlasov Army to become Chief of its Medical Service. In 1946 Dr. Trushnovich was elected to the NTS Council. Actively working against forcible repatriation of former Soviet citizens, he moved to West Berlin to head the NTS-sponsored Committee for the Protection of Refugees. The Committee, among other services, provided shelter and support to many defectors from the Red Army. In West Berlin Dr. Trushnovich organized the Free Russian-German Friendship Union, whose honorary President was the late Prof. E. Reuter, mayor of West Berlin. Dr. Trushnovich became a prominent leader among anti-communists in West Berlin. He published a number of books, wrote in newspapers and lectured extensively in West Germany, England, Switzerland, the Scandinavian countries, France and Italy. On April 13, 1954 he was brutally kidnapped by the KGB from West Berlin.

THE CAMP REGIME

LIFE IN DUBROVLAG

(An interview with Iosif Shneider, correspondent of "AMI" ¹)

Q. Please tell us about the camp itself. I heard that you served your sentence somewhere in Mordovia.

A. Yes, I was sentenced to four years in a corrective-labor camp. I was in Dubrovlag. There is a small station on the Kuybyshev railroad line called Pot'ma. A branch line, not shown on any map, leads from there to Dubrovlag. Dubrovlag consists of 36 camps, with two to three thousand people in each camp. I was in camp No. 7. There was no escape, because all around there were camps. The entire Mordovskaya ASSR is one network of corrective labor regime camps.

Q. Were there many Jewish political prisoners? How in general did the Jewish prisoners behave? Did they feel that they belonged together, did they understand the significance of what was happening, did they know about Israel?

A. Altogether there were about 100 Jews in our particular camp [No. 7]. But besides Zionists there were "economic counter-revolutionaries" and "revisionists". We carried on Zionist work among them, told them what we ourselves knew of Israel and the Jewish people, explained what remained obscure in "official Soviet sources". We carved out and distributed Stars of David, using twenty kopek coins (it was strictly forbidden to keep money or fret-saws). Generally speaking, the Jewish prisoners lived in harmony, and I would say, with a sense of personal dignity. When in 1959 Khrushchev declared in New York that there were no political prisoners in the Soviet Union, the authorities began liquidating the enormous concentration camps in Siberia and Kazakhstan, and concentrating political prisoners in one place—specifically, in Mordovia. It was then that Jews, many Jews, oppressed and miserable, who had already served many long years and who had experienced all the horrors of "camp anti-Semitism"—for the guards in the camps of Vorkuta and Tayshet were former cops—arrived in our camp.

Q. How did the non-Jewish prisoners feel about you? Was there any anti-Semitism among the prisoners?

A. You know that among the prisoners, I practically never felt any anti-Semitism. On the contrary. For instance on Israel's Independence Day we did not come out to work, and of course got 10-15 days of solitary confinement. But all day long that day we were continuously congratulated by the political prisoners: Ukrainians and Lithuanians, Estonians and Georgians, Armenians and Tatars. We in turn supported their national liberation movements.

Q. Was there any anti-Semitism in Dubrovlag from above? How did they behave with you personally? For weren't you sentenced for "Zionist propaganda"?

A. In this respect we had it easier, though the authorities—they were the same everywhere. I remember my first day at the camp. Lieutenant-colonel Fatkin (head of camp No. 7) and Colonel Tolbuzov, nicknamed Göbbels, head of the Cultural Educational Division (KVCh) sat around on their chairs like old-time merchants receiving live goods—slaves—that is us. When he found out about my profession, the chief of the cultural-educational section declared condescendingly: "A photographer—that's good. We need a photographer in the cultural-educational section." "But I am here not to photograph you, but to serve my sentence", said I. Citizen chief Fatkin lazily half opened one eye and inquired condescendingly: "And what is your nationality?" "An Israeli" I answered, upon which citizen chief Fatkin and citizen chief Tolbuzov became agitated and shouted: "What? What?" So I had to repeat my answer but accompany it with an explanation. This is how I ended up in the crash brigade.

¹ "AMI"—Association of Israeli Youth. The first issue of this journal appeared in December 1970; it is the organ of an Israeli association of students and youth who had emigrated from the USSR. The journal is of interest not only to Jews, because it has a great deal of recent information on Russia, good articles, prose and poetry. We are reproducing here part of an interview, published by AMI, with Iosif Shneider, a photographer now living in Israel, who was formerly an active member in the Zionist movement in the USSR.

Now I recall this with amusement, but then it wasn't funny. Cement, night and day. Hellish work. Luckily the brigade chief was Jewish (25 years for "economic counter-revolution"). After a while he figured out that I was "not suited" for this strenuous work.

Q. How long was the working day in an ordinary brigade?

A. Eight hours. But after the work was finished, there was always more to do. For example, very frequently we had to "fry the trolley" (i.e. destroy the bed-bugs in the plank beds), etc., etc.

Q. Did the resolutions of the Twentieth Meeting of the Party have any effect on camp food?

A. If you didn't fulfill your norm you received 400 grams of bread and hot food only every other day. If you did, the daily rations consisted of 600 grams of bread and a thin watery gruel which only faintly resembled soup.

Q. In other words, the principle of material incentive about which they now shout so much in the USSR was already being applied in concentration camps? Tell us please, what were your last impressions in camp and your first impressions when released?

A. During the last few months I was sent out to work on the so-called "no-guard" shift. They knew that a political prisoner would not try to escape when there were only a few hours left to be served. The first thing I did when I was "free" was to break my camp spoon and throw the pieces as far away as possible. This was the custom. What was priceless inside the camp lost all its value on the outside. Once freed, I re-examined all my hitherto held values. I said, "when freed", but upon release I didn't feel very much freer. There were many reasons for this. For instance, I was given a "wolf's passport", with which nobody gave you a job.

Nevertheless, despite this passport I managed to apply for an exit permit for Israel as soon as I returned. But my application was refused. I felt that I was just as far from my objective as in the camp.

MY RETURN

by A. Krasnov-Levitin

[Translated from *Grani*, No. 79, 1971]

After 1969 it became certain that I would be arrested. It is difficult to say on what this conviction was based. But the conviction was unmistakable and definite. Was it intuition?

Not entirely. It was also the ability to grasp quickly the political situation, an ability acquired through years of obsession with politics (I could only thus describe my intense, lifelong interest in politics).

At the end of 1969, there occurred a regular periodic swing of the political pendulum, a swing to the right—to the Stalinist era. There were several such swings after 1956, and they were all short-lived, (a self-evident truth—the wheel of history does not turn back), but each such swing had cost a certain number of people their freedom. However, now is not the time to analyze the situation—this should be left to the historians. At present I am just reaffirming the fact.

My political intuition did not betray me. In March 1969 Ivan Yakhimovich (chairman of a kolkhoz in Latvia), a wonderful person and a convinced democrat, was arrested.

In May, the trial of the Crimean Tartars in Tashkent was to take place. In May the epic of General Grigorenko and Gabay began with their arrest.

Meanwhile the clouds thickened: in June, B. Talantov, a talented and original, sixty-five year old religious writer was arrested in Vyatka (Kirov), then my friends began coming under attack, rumors began circulating about my arrest, and people began warning me that I may be arrested in autumn . . .

And then on the twelfth of September [1969] at five o'clock in the afternoon, the bell rang, sharply and persistently—I immediately understood what was the matter, for nobody ever rang my bell that way. I opened the door. An officer in police uniform, and behind him—a tangle of people. The police officer quickly disappears. Several civilians enter. A little middle aged woman jokes prettily:

So many guests at one time!—and shoves a little book under my nose. The book has her photograph, family name, and profession: "Akimova. Senior investigator of the Moscow procurature". I say:—I've heard about you.

Somewhat surprised: Really?

Actually I did hear that she sometimes handled political cases, that she liked to play the liberal, but nevertheless promptly executed the orders of those standing behind her.

So it happened! I'm again in jail.

This is already the third time.

On April 24, 1934—at eighteen—the GPU, Leningrad—the Shalernaya [prison].

June 8, 1949—at thirty three—the MGB, Moscow—the Lubyanka [prison].

September 12, 1969—at fifty-four—the police—Moscow.

At one a.m. I was led out of the police station and squeezed into a paddy wagon. Heavens! What a sight: gloomy, distorted, unshaven faces, hats with bashed in crowns, thieves, gangsters, debauchers of the young. I was to live in their midst for eleven months. There was time to consider one important problem—the problem of political prisoners. But first of all, to avoid all misunderstanding, I wish to point out that I wasn't at all bothered by the fact that I was among criminals. I got along very well with them. When I was asked whether they bothered me—I answered: "No, it was more so I who bothered them." And really, I was often ashamed that I could not return the respect, attention, and concern which they showed me, not to mention my irritability and fits of temper (the more difficult and unpleasant aspects of my character) which I visited upon them.

Nevertheless, the question arises: should political prisoners be kept together with common criminals?

Jurists the world over would unanimously say: "No." No—because living among criminals—the dregs of society, rough, cruel, and completely undeveloped intellectually and morally, is for an honest man a form of disguised torture. Nowhere are people brought so close to each other as in prison or a labor camp—here they share not only their food, their work, but even their bed, sleeping side by side. And so all along you are in the midst of dreadful people, capable of everything, people whom you would avoid on the street at night. In addition to mental torture, the political prisoner feels humiliated: he has been placed on the same level with the thieves, the gangsters, the murderers.

At present political prisoners are kept separately; however, the following fantastic trick is being carried out to keep them with the criminals: those charged under Article 70* are considered as political prisoners; however, those charged under article 190** are regarded as criminals. There is nothing more stupid than this "classification". Actually, who is to be considered a political or state criminal? A person whose actions are directed directly against the state. A person who ideologically opposed the state. But aren't persons charged under article 190, not ideological opponents of the state? No less so than persons charged under Article 70. So how can one explain why they are housed with the criminals?

There is no and cannot be any other reasons but to inflict pain. Not everyone gets along with people as easily as the writer of these lines. For example, how should someone like Boris Vladimirovich Talantov, a sixty-five year old teacher of mathematics, now in a camp for his writings, or thousands of others like him, feel, thrust among criminals?

Finally we were brought to the prison in Matrosskaya Tishina (instead of the Butyrki, as promised by Akimova). We approach. Our first night in prison. How difficult it is to describe a prison to someone who has never been in it. Imagine a large building something like a railroad station, in which the lights burn all night long, in which like in a giant ant heap people scurry night and day—then you will have some idea what a prison is like in a large city.

And so—night has come. Electric lights. Crowds of people. A great deal of activity. It is at this hour that people are taken there and back, from cell to cell, in expectation of some new formality to go through. The cells are relatively small, about twenty meters each, with bare iron two-tier bunks and a flush toilet: the air is stuffy and close, men swearing, filth . . . You are taken to the medic, brought back from the medic, led to hand in your belongings, given receipts; continuously taken in and out of cells; and all around—yelling, commands, oaths—and everywhere people, people and people . . . "How many are there of you?", burst out one of the officers who met us at Matrosskaya Tishina. *And truly, how many?*

Here I had my first encounter with a representative of the administration. This was Major Ivanov, head of solitary confinement block No. 1. It is extremely painful to recall the interrogation of dozens of undressed men standing before women interrogators, swearing no less foully than any man. These women interrogators relieve us of our keys, money, and all personal possessions, entering them on the spot into a register. I was wearing a cross. A cross is usually taken off the prisoner, entered in the register, and returned when the prisoner is transferred to another prison or released. This time the cocky young girl who took away my cross announced:

—We won't enter it in the register—we'll throw it away. And she repeated once again:—We'll throw it away.

In response I kicked up a row. The girls became embarrassed. One of them began arguing with me:

—Do you think the cross will help you get out of here any sooner?

Another one said:

—Well I just don't know. How can we enter a cross into the register? I just don't think that's possible. Speak to the head of the prison. As a matter of fact he is here right now.

A giant of a major came up to me. The following conversation took place between us:

—What do you want? What do you need the cross for? [Using the familiar Russian "thou", as with an inferior—Translator's note].

—First of all, don't "thou" me. You are talking to someone who is older than you.

—How do you know? [Still using the familiar "thou"]. Maybe I am older. (He wasn't even forty.)

—Not judging by your intellect. You've got the mind of a five-year old child. The cross belongs to me, and like all personal belongings should be entered in the register.

—Not for you, but for the priest (!—A.K.) Don't register the cross—throw it away.

So that's how I lost my cross.

[Several lines on pages apparently missing from the xerox copy—Translator's note]

There I again settled into one of those famous "Stolypin" railroad cars (I certainly spent enough time in these cars in my day). But perhaps not everyone knows what a "Stolypin" car is. On one occasion P. A. Stolypin became incensed when F. I. Rodichev, a well-known orator in the Duma and a member of the State Duma representing the Kadet Party, ended his speech with the exclamation: "A Stolypin necktie!", outlining a gallows in the air with his hand. Stolypin challenged F. I. Rodichev to a duel; did the famous statesman ever think that his name would be remembered only in connection with prisoner railroad cars? The famous Stolypin "otrubs" (peasant land allotments), his founding of the Land Bank, the "June 3rd" Duma—all is forgotten. Only prisoners continue to remember his name in association with those dreadful railroad cars.

What a sad fate, but what a lesson! A lesson for many statesmen. But as Bernard Shaw said: "History teaches lessons which nobody ever applies". I said that the Stolypin cars were dreadful; but the term is not mine—it appears in the poems of my godson, Yevgeniy Kushev "the dreadful Stolypin cars." They are really dreadful: a shiver overtakes you as you enter the car. The car is divided into two compartments, separated by a grate from the floor to the ceiling. The first impression—a cage for wild animals. The part intended for the prisoners has no windows, and is divided into small cages (cell-compartments) containing three tiers. These compartments are sometimes occupied by fifteen to twenty people. Their most unpleasant feature is their lack of sanitation. If you are thirsty—the guard won't give you any water. Only after many reminders will he hand you an aluminum mug of water—one for every five to six prisoners. The mug passes from mouth to mouth (and by the way, syphilis is a very common disease among the criminals, nevertheless medical examination is very superficial in all prisons). [Xerox smudged and illegible, and apparently several lines missing—Translators note].

Meanwhile life went on.

The conditions, as I already said, were very harsh: the cell (a twenty meter room) was filled with people—between eighteen to twenty-five or twenty-six. Continuous smoking, and the toilet located in the cell, poisoned the air; the unending clatter of dominoes and the roar of the loud-speaker were deafening, and never stopped for a moment from six in the morning to ten at night.

The food—very meager, but at my age, generally speaking, sufficient; six hundred grams of black bread and, in the morning, two teaspoons of sugar and a thin gruel: a soup with noodles; at mid-day—lunch: a frightful cabbage soup (I almost never ate it), porridge, usually millet; in the evening—hot water without sugar and some soup.

The most difficult thing to bear were the awful sanitary conditions: the prisoners slept on two-tier plank-beds (welded metal bunks) which almost touched each other, on mattresses which were never changed (on the day of the public bath

they were simply taken out into the yard and sprinkled with dust): there are no bed clothes—the prisoners are only given a mattress cover, a blanket, and a pillow. The only ones changed during the day of the public bath are the towel and the pillow case. The underclothes were taken for wash only until January, and then for some reason that stopped, so that the underclothes had to be washed in the cell under the cold water tap.

The public bath in the Armavir prison is a nightmare: the prisoners carry their mattresses and bed clothes which are then left outdoors. The prisoners are then led into the fore-bath entrance where they are invariably met by a yelling elderly woman who is said to have grown up in the prison at that job. (The story goes that her mother also had the same job). One had to see that woman with one's own eyes, yelling thunderously among those dozens of naked men—it is difficult to convey the picture. A sliver of black soap, sliced as thin as cheese, was given each prisoner for his bath; but the shower under which the prisoners washed operated for not more than ten minutes. It was almost impossible to get washed in this time.

However, above described conditions are a real paradise compared to the trips from Armavir to Sochi for the hearings. After an exhausting trip in a "Stolypin" car, which I already described, one is brought to Sochi to the local police station (on the main street of the town) because there is no prison in Sochi. Here a "room for those awaiting trial" (KPZ) greets you—a tiny room about ten meters, in which seven to eight fully clothed people lie side-by-side on the bare floor. At times the place is so crowded, it is impossible to stretch your legs. I spent eighteen days in such a place: between October 15 and November 4, 1969, and a second time, from January 10 to January 29, 1970. When after my first stay in Sochi I wrote to the local procurator, I received a reply from the assistant procurator of Sochi, Goncharov, that the conditions in which I found myself complied with the law.

Any comments are probably extraneous. I won't even go into it. I only want to bring attention to the following. Sochi is a beautiful resort town, to which people from all over the world flock for cures, rest, and amusement. There are dozens of sumptuous hotels, restaurants and cafes. And right there in their midst people are subjected to such dreadful conditions. People! What can those who permit the above say in their justification?

Nothing.

Two months had gone by. And now before me lies the opinion of the experts. This is truly a classic document. I will discuss it in greater detail.

The first question which the experts were asked was the following:

"What is the religious affiliation of the author?" The answer: "The author belongs to an extremist group within the Russian Orthodox Church. The aim of this group is unlimited religious propaganda, the abolition of all laws regulating the conduct of religious worship, religious education (including the establishment of Sunday schools), and the prohibition of antireligious education."

After reading this, I was, for a moment, dumbfounded. I must say, that I am not easily taken aback. I remember both the Stalin, the Yezhov, and the Beria periods; I am familiar with the utter unscrupulousness and deceit of the anti-religious propaganda of the Khrushchev period, but I never expected such blatant lies.

The experts were so carried away with their illegally self-appointed judicial functions, and so taken with their role, that at the end of their report they took it upon themselves to sentence me:

"Levitin, along with other dangerous sectarians, should be imprisoned."

TRANSFER BETWEEN TWO POINTS

(POTMA PRISON CAMP TO PERM)

1972

[The following account was smuggled out of a prison camp a short time ago]

(1) There were fifteen people in a compartment; sweat pouring down in streams; foodstuff has gone bad; for two days we have not been let out to relieve ourselves. People have been forced to relieve themselves in the corridor. They have ordered us to take soap and toothbrushes for the journey, even though they knew in ad-

vance that prisoners would not be allowed to use these things. They poured water from above (but) wouldn't open the air vents; only toward the end of the trip they opened them a little bit which was of little help. Naked people were lying on the floor; filth, stench, a lack of air. One man died en route. Terrible torment.

(2) In Perm the prisoners submitted a complaint about the conditions of the transfer. The reply (A general's reply was passed on to us that "everything was in accordance with the law". Conclusion: either he is covering up a crime or everything was in accordance with his instructions. Everything was planned.)

(3) To Rodionov: "Hey, heard, come here!" Ten days in solitary. Twenty people went on a hunger strike (Jews also). Izza was deprived of his visiting privileges. Wolff was deprived of his canteen privileges, visitors were cut off earlier.

(4) On the 4th of September all prisoners addressed a petition to the Red Cross requesting that the 4th of September be considered a day commemorating the 40 million who had perished during the 1930's, so that families could display photographs of their dead relatives and light two candles: one for their relatives and the other for the 40 million. Jews participated the first day. (However), they did not take part in the memorial ceremony.

(5) For refusal to attend political indoctrination sessions people have been deprived of visiting rights. There is an intention of declaring a one day hunger strike and write a petition about compulsory communist indoctrination.

Requests for prisoner

(6) Organize adoption of prisoner by Kibbutzim—Dymshitz, Osher, Frolov, Zeidilfed, Yakov Suslinsky.

(7) Aid Lila Dreisner and Bronya Chernoglaz to emigrate to Israel.

(8) On the 12th of September for refusal to attend political indoctrination session Chernoglaz was deprived of visiting rights. Earlier Yefrem Mendelvitch was deprived of visiting rights for the same reason.

(9) As a sign of protest against further imprisonment of Sylva Zalmonson on her birthday the 25th of October, the following people have declared a hunger strike: Wolff, Izza and Eduard Kuznetsov for three days; Dymshitz and Chernoglaz for three days beginning 27 October; Mendelvich and Grogauz for three days from 29 October; Frolov and Suslinsky for three days from 1 November.

The text of the declaration when hunger strike announced:

Sylva is not guilty, since she was forced to what she did by the unlawful actions of the authorities; she is a woman; the condition of her health is constantly deteriorating and she has been imprisoned long enough.

(10) They confiscated for investigation the Chernoglaz Hebrew notebook and won't give it back.

(11) When they shaved off the beards, they handcuffed the prisoners, and even though there was not resistance, they were deprived of visiting rights and put in solitary.

(12) Chernoglaz, Dymshitz and several others have not worked now for two months.

SELF-MUTILATION AND ATTEMPTED ESCAPES

[Excerpts from "My Testimony" by Anatoly Marchenko, E. P. Dutton Co., New York, 1969]

Here is one out of a number of similar stories, from which it differs only in its originality. It took place before my very own eyes in the spring of 1963. One of my cellmates, Sergei K., who had been reduced to utter despair by the hopelessness of various protests and hunger strikes and by the sheer tyranny and injustice of it all, resolved, come what may, to maim himself. Somewhere or other he got hold of a piece of wire, fashioned a hook out of it and tied it to some home-made twine (to make which he had unravelled his socks and plaited the threads). Earlier still he had obtained two nails and hidden them in his pocket during the searches. Now he took one of the nails, the smaller of the two, and with his soup bowl started to hammer it into the food flap—very, very gently, trying not to clink and let the warders hear—after which he tied the twine with the hook to the nail. We, the rest of the cons in the cell, watched him in silence. I don't know who was feeling what while this was going on, but to interfere, as I have already pointed out, is out of the question: every man has the right to dispose of himself and his life in any way he thinks fit.

Sergei went to the table in the middle of the room, undressed stark naked, sat down on one of the benches at the table and swallowed his hook. Now, if the warders started to open the door or the food flap, they would drag Sergei like a pike out of a pond. But this still wasn't enough for him: if they pulled he would willy-nilly be dragged towards the door and it would be possible to cut the twine through the aperture for the food flap. To be absolutely sure, therefore, Sergei took the second nail and began to nail his testicles to the bench on which he was sitting. Now he hammered the nail loudly, making no attempt to keep quiet. It was clear that he had thought out the whole plan in advance and calculated and reckoned that he would have time to drive in his nail before the warder arrived. And he actually did succeed in driving it right in to the very head. At the sound of the hammering and banging the warder came, slid the shutter aside from the peephole and peered into the cell. All he realized at first, probably, was that one of the prisoners had a nail, one of the prisoners was hammering a nail. And his first impulse, evidently, was to take it away. He began to open the cell door; and then Sergei explained the situation to him. The warder was nonplussed.

Soon a whole group of warders had gathered in the corridor by our door. They took turns at peering through the peephole and shouting at Sergei to snap the twine. Then, realizing that he had no intention of doing so, the warders demanded that one of us break the twine. We remained sitting on our bunks without moving; somebody only poured out a stream of curses from time to time in answer to their threats and demands. But now it came up to dinner time, we could hear the servers bustling up and down the corridor, from neighboring cells came the sound of food flaps opening and the clink of bowls. One fellow in the cell could endure it no longer—before you know it we'd be going without dinner—he snapped the cord by the food flap. The warders burst into the cell. They clustered around Sergei, but there was nothing they could do; the nail was driven deep into the bench and Sergei just went on sitting there in his birthday suit, nailed down by the balls. One of the warders ran to admin to find out what they should do with him. When he came back he ordered us all to gather up our things and move to another cell.

I don't know what happened to Sergei after that. Probably he went to the prison hospital—there were plenty of mutilated prisoners there: some with ripped open stomachs, some who had sprinkled powdered glass in their eyes and some who had swallowed assorted objects—spoons, toothbrushes, wire. Some people used to grind sugar down to dust and inhale it—until they got an abscess of the lung. . . . Wounds sewn up with thread, two lines of buttons stitched to the bare skin, these were such trifles that hardly anybody ever paid attention to them.

The surgeon in the prison hospital was a man of rich experience. His most frequent job was opening up stomachs, and if there had been a museum of objects taken out of stomachs, it would surely have been the most astonishing collection in the world.

Operations for removing tattoos were also very common. I don't know how it is now, but from 1963 to 1965 these operations were fairly primitive: all they did was cut out the offending patch of skin, then draw the edges together and stitch them up. I remember one con who had been operated on three times in that way. The first time they had cut out a strip of skin from his forehead with the usual sort of inscription in such cases: 'Khrushchev's Slave'. The skin was then cobbled together with rough stitches. He was released and again tattooed his forehead: 'Slave of the USSR.' Again he was taken to hospital and operated on. And again, for a third time, he covered his whole forehead with 'Slave of the CPSU'. This tattoo was also cut out at the hospital and now, after three operations, the skin was so tightly stretched across his forehead that he could no longer close his eyes. We called him 'The Stare'.

In the same place, in Vladimir, I once happened to spend several days in a cell with Subbotin. This was a fellow the same age as myself and a homosexual. There were few homosexuals in Vladimir and everyone knew who they were. There was nothing they could earn there. He had been classed as a 'political' after being in an ordinary criminal camp and making an official complaint—thus 'letting the tone down'. One day, after having sent about forty or fifty complaints to Brezhnev and the Presidium of the Supreme Council and to Khrushchev and the Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union, he swallowed a whole set of dominoes—twenty-eight pieces. When the whole of our cell was being led down the corridor to the exercise yard—he had swallowed the dominoes just before our exercise period—he clapped himself on the stomach and said to one con from camp

maintenance who was coming the other way: 'Listen, Valery!' I don't know whether Valery really heard the sound of dominoes knocking together in Subbotin's stomach, but he asked him: 'What have you got there?' and Subbotin drawled 'Dominoes'.

The doctors wouldn't operate on Subbotin. They simply ordered him to count the pieces during defecation, saying that they would have to come out on their own. Subbotin conscientiously counted them each time and on his return to the cell ticked off in pencil on a special chart the number that had come out. No matter how diligently he counted, however, four pieces still remained unaccounted for. After several days of agonizing suspense he washed his hands of them: if they stayed in his stomach it was all right as long as they didn't interfere, and if they were out already, then to the devil with them.

I should point out that Tkach believed in Keshka's story not only because he was cracked; everyone who had done time in Vladimir knew of cases even more horrifying than cannibalism. In one cell, for instance, the cons had done as follows: they had got hold of a razor blade somewhere and for several days collected up paper. When everything was ready they each cut a piece of flesh from their bodies—some from the stomach, others from the leg. Everybody's blood was collected into one bowl, the flesh was thrown in, a small fire was made from the paper and some books and then they started to half-fry, half-stew their feast. When the wardens noticed that something was wrong and burst into the cell the stew was still not cooked and the cons, falling over themselves and burning their fingers, grabbed the pieces from the bowl and stuffed them into their mouths. Even the wardens said afterwards that it was a horrible sight.

I can well imagine that this story is hard to believe. But later I personally met some of the participants in that terrible feast and talked with them. The most remarkable thing of all was that they were fully normal people.

I have already mentioned self-mutilation in the cooler and such cases are even more frequent on special regime. Men gouge their eyes out, throw ground glass in them, or hang themselves. At night sometimes they slit their veins under the blankets; and if their neighbor doesn't wake up soaked in blood, yet one more martyr is freed of his burden.

One day three cons agreed to put an end to themselves in the usual way, that is with the help of the sentries. At about three in the afternoon they took three planks from the brick factory and placed them against the wall. The sentry in the watch tower shouted:

"Stand back or I'll fire!"

"By all means, and deliver us from this happy life," replied one of the cons and started climbing. Having reached the top, he got entangled in the barbed wire there. At this moment there was a burst of Tommy gun fire from the tower and he slumped across the wire and hung there. Then the second man climbed up and calmly awaited his turn. A short burst of fire and he fell to the ground at the foot of the fence. The third man followed and he too fell beside the first.

I was told later that one of them had remained alive, he had been seen in the hospital at camp three. So at least he had escaped from special regime for a time. The other two, of course, had escaped for ever, shot dead on the spot. In general this suicide was just like many others, differing only in that it was a group affair. Individual instances are common, and not only in special regime camps.

A sentry who picks off such an 'escaper' in this way gets rewarded with extra leave to show admin's gratitude. But the attitude of the other soldiers to the marksman doesn't always coincide with admin's. Once, in camp seven in the autumn of 1963, a sentry shot a routine suicide case, a fellow who was ill, when he was on the wall. He got his leave all right, but he was black and blue when he set off for home: that night the other soldiers had organized a little farewell party for him, though under a different pretext, of course.

Once I saw two former criminal cons, then politicals, who were nicknamed Mussa and Mazai. On their foreheads and cheeks they had tattoos: 'Communists=butchers' and 'Communists drink the blood of the people'. Later I met many more cons with such sayings tattooed on their faces. The most common of all, tattooed in big letters across the forehead, was: 'Khrushchev's slave' or 'Slave of the CPSU' (Communist Party of the Soviet Union).

Here in the special regime camp, in our hut, there was a fellow called Nikolai Sheherbakov. When I caught sight of him in the exercise yard through the window I almost collapsed; there wasn't a single clear spot on his whole face. On one cheek he had 'Lenin was a butcher' and on the other it continued: 'Millions are suffering because of him'. Under his eyes was: 'Khrushchev, Brezhnev, Voroshilov are

butchers'. On his pale, skinny neck a hand had been tattooed in black ink. It was gripping his throat and on the back of the hand were the letters CPSU, while the middle finger, ending on his adam's apple, was labelled KGB.

Shcherbakov was in another corner cell similar to ours, only at the other end of the hut. At first I only saw him through the window when their cell was taken out for exercise. Later, though, we three were transferred to another cell and we often exercised simultaneously in adjoining yards. In secret conversation, unnoticed by the warders, we got to know one another. I became convinced that he was normal and not cracked, as I had thought at first. He was far from stupid, he used to read quite a lot and he knew all the news in the newspapers. Together with him in one cell were Mazai and the homosexual, Misha, both with tattooed faces!

In late September 1961, when our cell was taken out for exercise, Nikolai asked us in sign language whether anyone had a razor blade. In such cases it is not done to ask what for—if somebody asks, it means they need it, and if you've got one you hand it over, with no questions asked. I had three blades at that time which I still had from camp ten, before landing in the cooler, and I had hidden them in the peak of my cap as a necessary precaution; in spite of all the searches they had never been found. I went into the latrines, ripped open the seam under the peak with my teeth and took out one blade. Back in the yard, when the warder's attention was distracted, I stuck it into a crack on one of the wooden fence posts to which the barbed wire was secured. Nikolai watched me from his window. The blade stayed there in the crack all day long. Many other cons saw it—the boys used to scour every corner of the exercise yard while outside, every pebble, every crack, in the hope of finding something useful. But once a blade has been placed somewhere, that means it already has an owner waiting to pick it up; in such a case nobody will touch it. Furthermore Nikolai spent the whole day at the window, keeping watch on the blade just in case. While exercising the following day he picked out the blade and took it back to his cell.

Later that evening a rumor passed from cell to cell: 'Shcherbakov has cut off his ear'. And later we learned the details. He had already tattooed the ear: 'A gift to the 22nd Congress of the CPSU'. Evidently he had done it beforehand, otherwise all the blood would have run out while it was being tattooed. Then, having amputated it, he started knocking on the door and when the warder had unlocked the outer door, Shcherbakov threw his ear through the bars to him and said: 'Here's a present for the 22nd Congress.'

This incident is well known to all cons in Mordovia.

The next day we saw Shcherbakov at the window of his cell. His head was bandaged and in the place where his right ear should have been the bandage was soaked with blood, and blood was on his face, neck and hands. A couple of days later he was taken off to hospital, but what happened to him after that I do not know.

And that is the reason why cons always have to be without their caps during inspection and to uncover their foreheads, so that they can be checked for tattoos. Men with tattoos are first sent to the cooler and then put in separate cells, so as not to corrupt the others. Wherever they go after that they are. . .

One of the prisoners here in camp number ten was a Lithuanian, Richardas K. He had once taken part in an escape bid and he told me how they had been caught. Three of them, all Lithuanians, had somehow managed to elude their escorts while at work in the fields and had only been noticed when near a wood. They came under fire, but it was already too late. Then the tommy gunners were called up from division headquarters; they put a cordon round the wood and soldiers with dogs began to hunt the fugitives. It was not long before the dogs found the scent and soon Richardas and his comrades heard the chase almost at their backs. They realized that come what may they could not avoid it, but still they tried to hide in the hope that the guards with the dogs would plunge straight past them. The other two shinned up an oak tree and hid in the foliage, while Richardas buried himself in fallen leaves (the time was autumn) beneath a bush. The scene that followed happened literally before his very eyes.

He had not even had time to camouflage himself properly with the leaves when two soldiers appeared with dogs. The dogs circled the oak trees and clawed at the bark with their front paws. A further six tommy gunners ran up together with an officer holding a pistol. The young men in the tree were discovered at once. The officer shouted: 'So you wanted freedom, you mother——? Come on, get down!'

The lowest branch was about six feet off the ground. Richardas saw one of his companions put his feet on the branch, then crouch down and ease his stomach

on to the branch so that he was hanging across it, with his hands on the branch and his legs in the air, ready to jump down. At that moment he heard the sound of several bursts from a tommy gun and the young man fell to the ground like a sack. But he was still alive, he writhed and squirmed with pain. The officer fired another shot into him and ordered the dogs to be unleashed. The man on the ground, meanwhile, was unable even to defend himself. When the dogs had been dragged off, he remained lying motionless on the ground. The officer ordered him to be picked up and carried away. They dug the toes of their boots into him, but he did not rise. Then the officer said: 'Why spoil your boots on him? What do you think your weapons are for?' The soldiers started stabbing the wounded man with their bayonets and jeering: 'Come on, come on, stand upon, don't try to pretend!' The wounded man labored to get to his feet. His bullet-riddled arms flapped like empty sleeves. His tattered clothes had slipped off down to his waist. He was completely smothered in blood. Prodding him along with their bayonets, they led him to the next tree. The officer called out: 'Guard halt!' The fugitive collapsed at the foot of the tree. Two soldiers and a dog remained to keep watch on him while the rest turned their attention to the second youth. He too was ordered to climb down from the tree. Having decided, evidently, to be more clever, he did not go as far as the lower branches, but plummeted on to the ground at the very feet of the soldiers. No one had time to fire. As he lay there on the ground the officer bounded over to him and fired several shots into his legs. Then he received the same treatment as the first; he was kicked unconscious, savaged by the dogs and then stabbed by bayonets. Finally the officer ordered the beating to stop, went over to the youth and said: 'All right, free and independent Lithuania, tell me, where's the third?' The youth was silent. The officer swung his boot into him and repeated the question. Richardas heard his comrade croak: 'I'd call you a fascist, but you're worse than that.' The officer was outraged: 'I fought against the fascists myself! In the front line. And with fascists like you as well. How many of us did you shoot back home in Lithuania?'

Again they threw themselves on the wounded youth and started to beat him. Then the officer ordered him to crawl on his hands and knees to the tree where the first man lay: 'If you don't want to walk you can crawl!'

And the wounded youth, with his legs broken, started to crawl, egged on by bayonets like the first. The officer walked along beside him and jeered: 'Free Lithuania! Go on, crawl, you'll get your independence!' Richardas told me that this youth was a student from Vilnius and had got seven years for distributing pamphlets.

When the two fugitives were together they were beaten and bayoneted again, this time to death. Finally there were no more groans or cries. The officer assured himself that they were dead and sent to the settlement for a cart. He evidently counted on dealing with the third one by the time the cart arrived. Richardas, however, took quite some time to find. Whether it was the dogs who were tired, or perhaps the smell of decomposing leaves that threw them off the scent, they were quite unable to find him. Soldiers ran about the wood, almost stepping on him and the officer stood no more than two yards away from his bush. Richardas said that on several occasions he was ready to leap up and run for it. And it was only when Richardas could already hear the sound of cart wheels grinding along the road that the officer came up to the pile of leaves, prodded them with his toe and instantly yelled: 'Here he is, the bastard! Get up!' At that moment the cart came along. 'Where are the escaped prisoners, comrade major?' Richardas stood up. The major was aiming his pistol straight at him. Instinctively Richardas jerked round at the very instant the shot rang out, then felt a searing pain in his chest and shoulder and fell to the ground. He did not lose consciousness, but lay there motionless, trying not to stir or groan. Other men gathered around and somebody asked 'Maybe he's still alive, comrade major?' And the major replied: 'Alive my foot! I shot him point blank in the chest.' He could not have noticed how Richardas had turned away.

Richardas was thrown into the bottom of the cart—even then he managed not to groan—and the two corpses were piled on top of him. The cart moved off towards the camp. Richardas heard someone approach the cart and heard the major say: 'Killed while trying to escape.'

But a trial's only a trial and escaping prisoners are intentionally killed while being caught so as to put off the rest from trying. And the injured and beaten are purposely not healed. Seeing someone like Richardas without an arm, many men think twice about whether it's worth the risk. But a trial, a prison sentence—that would stop nobody under the conditions that exist in our prison camps.

But even without Richardas's story I well remembered the incident at the Bukhtarma power station. There the officer had fired practically point blank at an unarmed fugitive. I had seen that myself. And I and all the others knew that if we were caught the odds were against us remaining alive. But nonetheless we decided to take the risk.

This old man of ours was not only cracked but also very weak physically. He was always complaining about pains in his head, pains in his spine, pains in his heart. One day the two of us applied to see the doctor. During her rounds the nurse always asks through the food trap: "Is anybody sick?" Almost all the cons complain about some ailment or other, especially in winter and then the nurse, not bothering to examine the patient, gives him some sort of powder. But if the complaint exceeds her competence she registers the con hospital block. The doctor came, looked at Tkach, felt his pulse and quietly laid the limp arm across his breast. Then, after questioning us as to what had happened, she called the senior warder outside. She never appeared again, but the senior warder came back and ordered Kekshas and me to carry the old man out. I took him under the arms. Kekshas took the legs, and we dragged the body into an empty cell that was indicated to us. There the warder ordered us to lay the dead man on a bare cot and then hurried us out again. The cell was locked. I said to the warder:

"I suppose Tkach can lie on his cot till lights out now, can he?"

"Do you want to go in the cooler?" roared the warder as usual.

Tkach was dead. He had been completely alone, nobody had ever helped him and he never ever received any letters from anyone. But maybe he has relatives somewhere who lost touch with him and don't know what became of him. And so: old man Tkach starved for many years, suffered, fell ill, froze and died in Vladimir Prison in the winter of 1962.

LETTER FROM CAMP No. 17 DUBROVNYI DIRECTORATE OF CORRECTIVE
LABOUR CAMPS (MORDOVSKA ASSR)

[Translated from Samizdat]

Camp No. 17 under the Dubrovnyy Directorate of Corrective Labour Camps is located in the village of Ozerne in the Zubovo-Polans'kiy rayon of Mordovia. The camp has two zones: the main one holds approximately 700 women convicted for ordinary crimes, and a second holds 276 male political prisoners. The chief of Camp 17 is Captain Novikov; chief of section 17-A (the men's zone) is Captain Annenkov; chief of the medical section is first lieutenant Zabaykin; the representative of the KGB to Camp 17 is Captain Ivan Romanovych Krut'.

The majority of the male prisoners are invalids. There are 208 invalids of the second category and 51 of the third. In this zone there are only two crowded, cold and badly ventilated barracks. Food is brought in from the women's zone and in spite of the fact that the prisoner's food ration is very small to begin with, he never receives a full portion anyway. Even a healthy person cannot eat the sour, half-raw bread—not to mention sick people who make up the majority of the camps inmates.

Medical aid is virtually non-existent. For example, on January 7, 1967, the prisoner Mykhailo Soroka, who has spent 31 years in Polish and Soviet prisons (24 years in Soviet prisons), fell seriously ill with myocardium infarct. In such cases immediate qualified medical aid is essential. But a medical assistant arrived only four days later, on January 11th. On the seventh day after his attack, Soroka was taken to the medical station. Up to this time he had remained in the barracks and was looked after by Mykola Yevdokimov, one of the prisoners who is also an experienced medical assistant but who was helpless without drugs and instruments.

The so-called hospital contains only 7 beds—to accommodate 22 invalids the majority of whom are seriously ill and quite old. There are no drugs and the prisoners are not allowed to receive any from their families (not even vitamins, although the diet is so poor). No one even thinks of dentists and such. Theoretically, the seriously ill should be transferred to the central hospital (in camp No. 3 in the village of Barashevo). But this is not always possible, as in Soroka's case, if the sick man cannot be moved (especially over these terrible roads).

Often directing a man to the central hospital brings no results. On several occasions when the camp doctors sent prisoners to the central hospital with diagnoses of cancer, the doctors at the central hospital, instead of releasing the prisoners on the basis of their illness (they have full right to do this), sent them

back to the camp with a diagnosis of severe gastritis. Only the prisoners' death and autopsy confirmed the initial diagnosis. Prisoners are released only in cases where death is expected to come a few days after the release. What else can one expect from people who will not take one step without orders from the KGB and the operational department?

In Camp No. 3 (the central hospital), the deciding voice is that of the chief of the regime, Captain Kitsayev, who released and sent back to camp Dr. Horboviy although his treatment was far from being finished. Similar cases occur quite often. During Karavansky's hunger strike, the chief of the medical section in Camp No. 11, Yeremeyeva, stated that she knows about the hunger strike but she cannot do anything because she has no orders from the operational department. The prisoner Ivan Maksym applied several times for medical aid to the surgeon in Camp No. 11, but the latter refused to talk to him, calling him a simulator. As a result, the prisoner died.

The medical personnel chosen from among the prisoners is not much better: only people who cooperate with the KGB and the operational department are selected. Medical training plays absolutely no part in the selection. For example, such medics-prisoners as Yaroslav Hevrych and Dmytro Verkholyak, were transferred from their jobs in the medical section and put to work in the workshops, although there is a shortage of medical workers. But men who have no connection with medicine, as for example Malykhin, and those who are in the good graces of the KGB and the operational department, have worked and still work in the medical center. If there is an experienced and conscientious medical worker in Camp No. 17, this is only because he did not please someone with no medical training at the central hospital and was sent to Camp No. 17.

On the whole, Camp No. 17 is organized as a penal camp. The administration does not hide this in their conversations, although officially it is not considered as such. In addition to invalids, they have brought to this camp people who had no inclination to submit to the so-called educational work among prisoners and thus could by their actions or examples negatively influence other prisoners to the same end. Therefore a policy of repressions towards the prisoners is severely applied here directed at undermining health and suppressing the least display of rebellion or protest. With this aim in mind, the organized manufacture (sewing of gloves and construction) is based on a system of compulsion, arbitrariness and repressions. Prisoners who work on construction do not have the required warm clothing (felt boots, quilted jackets); the temperature in the shop stays between +5° C and +9° C and the floor temperature is usually under 0° C. Thus any talk of normal work, when one has to hold metal machine parts in one's hands at such temperatures, is absurd. Nevertheless, the prisoner is expected to fill a quota which would be impossible to fill even under normal circumstances, whereas here the equipment is broken down and the premises where the prisoners are forced to spend 9 hours are unheated (the prisoners are supposed to work an 8-hour day).

One hour is reserved for a so-called lunch break and rest period. But not only is this not a rest, it is an additional punishment, because people are forced to spend an extra hour in the cold building. Lunch and supper are served in unsanitary conditions, in generally dirty premises, without tables—so that the prisoner has to eat at his machine. There is nowhere to wash one's hands because the tiny wash-basin cannot hold enough water for everyone, and in the work area there is neither water nor towels. Smoking is prohibited in both the workshop and in the corridor. As there is no place where smoking is allowed, the prisoners are forced to smoke in the hallway leading to the street where doors are continually being opened and there is a constant draft (here temperatures are at -30° C).

The administration constantly threatens those who do not fill their quotas with repressions (at this time there is no one who fills his quota) and they will put these repressions into force as soon as the training period is over (at the beginning of February, 1967). Because invalids of the second category do not have to work and there are not enough people to do the work, the administration has announced that it will form a local medical commission to re-categorize the invalids and put them to work. Captain Annenkov, chief of section 17—a has spoken openly about this.

The reason for this is that prior to our arrival there was a camp for female political prisoners here. The majority of the prisoners was comprised of women convicted for religious beliefs—in other words, a group which was least capable

of opposing the arbitrariness of camp administration or even of protesting various pressures. In addition, these were mostly old women. The guards say that they were exhausted, ragged creatures, who were forced to work in cold premises where the temperature seldom rose 2 or 3 degrees above zero and more often remained below zero. In so far as the system of compulsion had become a tradition here, they intend to maintain it for the future. No wonder that the guards state quite openly that the more we complain about their violations of our legal rights, the more the authorities praise them—and vice versa.

Have the prisoners tried to complain about these numerous violations, pressures, and injustices? They have done so more than once with no results. The chief of the camp, Capt. Annenkov, shouted that things would remain as they are. The head engineer, when he was told that we are forced to eat in the cold, in unsanitary premises, replied that this is not his concern and suggested that we direct our appeals "Vanka Vyetrov" (an expression meaning "talk to the wind"). After numerous complaints, a medical inspector arrived from the medical sector of Dubravlag Directorate. In the first place he did not believe that the temperature in the work shop was much too low (he refused to measure on the spot), and stated that "quotas were always filled and exceeded here". After we had told him that we had recently sent out a number of complaints signed by the foreman (a free man) in which we mentioned the temperature in the workshop, he only asked to whom we had addressed them and showed dissatisfaction that we had sent these complaints to the Prosecutor General rather than to the Directorate.

With regard to the complaint written by the writer Daniel about the shocking attitude to Mykhailo Soroka's illness, the same medical inspector stated that all these matters were irrelevant (the sick man had not died during the time when he had received no medical aid) and tried to force Daniel to acknowledge that everything was in order in the camp (he needed this for his report). Daniel refused. Small wonder then that when prisoners demand what is theirs legally, the representatives of the administration do nothing and assure them "You may complain", because they know that no one will pay the slightest attention to the complaints. To whom can we address our complaints when our educators of the past sit in all the departments? Their caliber is obvious from such facts as that in Camp No. 7, the man who was doctor there for two or three years, had before been the representative from the operational department to Camp No. 19, from where he had been transferred for attempting to rape a nurse. At present he is working as an orderly officer in the prison in Ruzayevka in Mordovia. In Camp No. 1, the chief of section is first lieutenant Nekrasov who had previously been a medical worker in the same camp. Our attorneys supervision is similar to the medical care we receive. (Our attorneys often switch from positions as lawyers to positions as chiefs of camps, Directorate officials and vice versa. This is what happened to our present assistant chief of Dubrovnyy Camp Directorate, Nekachan.)

We have already mentioned our letters and packages. I want to add that our reception of packages of books which is legally permitted to us, depends (as do our letters) on the will of the KGB operative (in this case, Capt. Krut') who makes our right an illusion.

The camp holds representatives of various nations of the Soviet Union. There are Latvians, Lithuanians, Estonians, and Russians. As might be expected, there are also quite a few Ukrainians.

Who are they?

(Here follows a list of Ukrainian prisoners. The author (or authors) of this letter groups them into the following categories: "participants of national liberation movements 1942-1954 and of various illegal groups of similar nature"; "those convicted for religious beliefs (Catholics, Baptists, Jehovah's Witnesses, etc.); "those convicted for so-called anti-Soviet agitation, for attempts to cross the border, and similar crimes"; "those convicted of crimes committed during the war". The list gives the name of the prisoner, the oblast he comes from, his date of birth, date of arrest, date of sentence. There is a total of 114 names on the list. However, this is obviously not a complete list of Ukrainian prisoners in Camp No. 19 because at the end of some categories, there appears "and others".)

... Although all the Ukrainians listed here were sentenced by UkrSSR courts, they are held (and always have been held) in Russian camps. This is only one more unnecessary proof of UkrSSR's rejection of her sovereignty—carrying out the sentences of her courts.

... There are only 17 categorical prisoners—that is, prisoners capable of work—in the camp.

The chief of the Dubrovnyy Directorate of Camps is Colonel Gromov, known for his arbitrariness in the 40's and 50's in Kamyslakh (Kemerovo Oblast). The chief of the KGB section attached to the Dubrovnyy Directorate is lieutenant-colonel Blinov.

THE KINGIR UPRISING—KINGIR PRISONERS FIGHT AGAINST TANKS

[From "The Profits of Slavery" by Adolphs Silde, Latvian National Foundation in Scandinavia, Stockholm, 1958]

The most dramatic of all uprisings occurred in the Kingir copper mine region in Central Asia. Nine thousand male and four thousand female camp inmates participated in it. Only a few, possibly a hundred, avoided the fight; most of them were MVD informers who had to stand aside in the interests of their personal safety. A year earlier, the Ukrainian resistance organization—the largest in this camp—had killed about 100 stool pigeons. In cooperation with the Balts and other national groups there evolved, in time, a special "counter-intelligence service" which managed to unmask every informer and traitor. This enabled the Kingir rebels to open their fight in a spirit of greater unity than in Vorkuta.

The Kingir strike developed from the very outset into a well-organized uprising. Leadership of the strike was assumed by Colonel Kuznetsov, one of the most popular Soviet officers, who had acquired undeniable merit in storming Berlin at the end of World War II. In 1952, he was arrested on charges of having attempted to escape to West Berlin with an entire tank regiment. After having been kept in various prisons, he was sent in 1954 to Kingir—a place which, according to the MVD, housed only "fascists." The Soviet security authorities had a hard time with these "fascists." As stated above, the political prisoners in Kingir had gotten the better of the MVD agents, and the MVD therefore tried to regain its influence. It formed a plan. In April 1954, about 600 criminal prisoners were sent to Kingir which since 1949 had only had political internees.

"You see," an MVD officer told one of the newcomers a few days after their arrival, "the fascists plan to attack and do away with you. Unless you forestall them, your days are numbered. Try to teach them a lesson; we shall back you up in every possible way."

However, men who have spent long years in interment develop a special instinct. This particular man and other criminal convicts understood that the MVD was using them. One of them went to see a representative of the political prisoners and told him frankly what he had been told.

It turned out that the new arrivals had been imprisoned with political prisoners a few years previously, and, under their guidance, had seen through the Soviet methods of terrorism.

The spokesman of the criminal internees said they favored solidarity with the political prisoners, especially where the common interests of all internees were at stake.

Who were these criminal prisoners?

Many were youths whom grim Soviet life had left without parents, school or home. Not so many years ago they were called *bezprizorniye*, meaning "those without home and shelter." There was no one to help and take care of them. Some of them had been sent—at the age of 16—to the Kingir camp branded as habitual criminals. Their chests and hands were tattooed. These children of Stalin's dictatorship, interned behind barbed wire or thick walls, listened, perplexed, to stories about the "sunken world" which the October Revolution had replaced by the dictatorship of the proletariat. One thing, however, seemed quite clear to them—the Chekists could not possibly be their friends and therefore they did not even covet the benefits promised by the MVD.

It was soon found that the MVD planned to incite the criminal internees against the political prisoners; the subsequent clash would disclose the leaders of the latter, something the MVD had so far failed to achieve with stool pigeons or otherwise in Kingir.

One of those who enjoyed authority from the very outset was the aforesaid Colonel Kuznetsov.

He not only spoke but wrote frankly, showing no respect for or fear of the Soviet power. And so, for having described the prison cell of the camp in a letter to his wife, he was confined there himself, joining 400 other prisoners.

The true reasons behind the activity of the newcomers were not clear, but one Sunday they dismantled the heating tube of the camp bath and used it to break

through the separating wall of the neighboring camp. It was one of the internal walls designed to separate the different camps. An outer wall, eight meters thick, encircled the whole camp area.

The wall was two brick-lengths thick. It would have been impossible to break through it with a pipe, unless a place had been chosen which was formerly a passage way. This was done and the passage was reopened.

Eye-witnesses have reported that the guards were amazed. They had orders to shoot, but did not do so. As they hesitated, it was possible to free 400 internees and 200 held in the penal barrack. Kuznetsov, too, was released. He may even have imagined that the prison was forcibly opened because of him. Having thus regained partial freedom, Kuznetsov assumed the leadership of the political prisoners. He ordered the capture of the camp guards.

The criminal prisoners meanwhile continued their task. The wall which separated the two men's camps from the women's camp was pierced within an hour. Four thousand women were no longer separated from the rest of the camp inmates.

By next morning the situation could be seen more clearly. The guards had been captured, but their officers had escaped. Food warehouses and other strategic places in the camp were guarded by lookouts selected by the prisoners themselves.

Another day passed, and the Soviet administration and the MVD prepared countermeasures. At three o'clock the next morning, MVD units entered the camp from three sides. The MVD guards had been drinking. With shouts, they attacked everyone who crossed their path, using bayonets or rifle butts. Shots were heard from the women's camp. As the internees of neighboring camps were driven out from the women's camp, they were fired on. Some 60 or 70 dead were counted. The number of wounded was higher. The MGB hurriedly transported the dead to nearby Dzhzhkazan.

Kuznetsov, who now grouped around him representatives of all nationalities, protested against this action. He was supported by Balts and by Ukrainian partisans known as *banderists*.

The regulations forbade armed guards to enter the camp, but this night whole military units had broken into it.

"We demand the punishment of the guilty! Armed units had no right to penetrate into the camp area." This was the slogan under which the Kingir camp inmates began their strike. They knew that the military action had been taken without Moscow's knowledge and that the law, even if it was Soviet law, was on their side. In the case of any setback, the Soviets always look for scapegoats; if the strike looked like ending in favor of the internees, Moscow would blame the Soviet officials in Kingir and this event would not pass unnoticed. The strikers knew this, and therefore stressed the illegal character of the camp administration's action.

The strikers also demanded that the bodies of their fallen comrades be brought back to the site of the clash. Only in this way could they prove that their fellows had been killed by MVD bullets and had not—as the administration might allege—been killed by the strikers themselves. Another demand was that no internees be transferred to another camp within the coming weeks.

The local Soviet officials promised to fulfill the strikers' demands and in addition undertook to summon a public prosecutor. The acceptance of their demands made the strikers call off the strike which had lasted three days.

However, as soon as the work brigades began work, the guards rounded up the criminal convicts and drove them out of the camp. Since the original scheme of the MVD had failed, it had been decided to send them elsewhere. The MVD men behaved so brutally that this alone caused new trouble.

One of the criminal convicts succeeded in reaching the camp siren and sounded a warning which was heard by political prisoners working on a building. Their prompt decision was to return to the camp. The guards stopped them, but work ended.

On their return to the camp in the evening, the political prisoners learned about the administration's failure to honor its pledge and indignantly resumed the strike.

A new, enlarged "strike committee" was formed. Of its 15 members, 14 were designated by the men's camps and one by the women. The women's representative was a "counterrevolutionary" who had spent 17 years in forced labor camps. Kuznetsov again played a leading role.

From that moment on, the Kingir camp cluster was turned in a truly autonomous republic of a type not known in the Soviet Union since the October Revolution. The strike committee supplemented the old demands with new ones. These were:

1. Review of indictments and sentences.

2. Amnesty for juveniles and the aged.
3. Release of foreigners to their home countries.
4. Conversion of the camps from regime camps into ordinary labor camps.
5. Removal of bars from barrack windows.
6. Removal of numbers from clothing.
7. An eight-hour work day.
8. A wage raise.
9. Reduction of sentences by up to seven days for each work day performed.
10. Right to choose residence after release.
11. Right to correspond more often with family.
12. Promise not to punish the strike committee, and
13. Review of sentences imposed in 1953 and punishment of officials responsible for imposition of these high sentences.

With respect to demand No. 13, it should be noted that in 1953 a strike broke out in protest against the brutal treatment of political prisoners by the guards. One day, as they returned from work, a guard opened fire without reason, killing four and wounding 16 internees, including three Latvians. To "justify" himself, the guard later alleged that an internee had grinned in the work column. The prisoners' indignation was so strong that it took the form of a protest strike which went on for three days. For participation in that strike a number of prisoners received heavy sentences. In 1954, as a token of solidarity with their comrades, the strikers demanded a review of their sentences and restitution for wrongs suffered in 1953.

The main demand was that a representative of the Soviet Communist Party Central Committee come from Moscow.

To preclude the possibility of accusing the strikers of being "counterrevolutionaries," Kuznetsov advised them to abstain from anti-Soviet slogans. He suggested instead that the suppression of the strike be made more difficult through slogans, such as "Long live the Soviet Constitution," and "Down with Beria's terror methods."

Invocation of the Soviet Constitution was merely a parody. Article of the constitution starts with the words: "Considering as its main task to end any exploitation of people and the elimination of classes, without pitying the exploiters . . ."

If the Kingir mutineers demanded the same, they spoke a deep truth and their slogan was actually not so strange. Only, those who live in the Soviet Union need no explanation what the Constitution and the law means—they know it too well. The Kingir rebels who rose against the Soviet exploiters belonged to the lowest class in the Soviet police state and they seriously wished that their exploitation cease. However, their slogan was not the result of naivete.

They chose the sign of the Red Cross as their flag. The Red Cross and Red Crescent are the traditional signs of a humanitarian spirit. Why couldn't these principles be applied in Kingir, the strikers thought?

Then one day the loudspeakers in the watchtowers sounded: "Attention, attention! Representatives from Moscow have just arrived. They want to talk to you. At three o'clock they will come to the camp."

The strike committee placed tables in the yards of the two camps, and the inmates of three individual camps, both men and women, gathered there.

An eye-witness describes the ensuing events: "Punctually at three p.m., four of us went to meet the Moscow representatives. Clad in bright uniforms, they came to the gates. Their gold braid and medals shone in the sun. One of the generals was called Dolghish, and a few moments later we were told that he was Assistant Public Prosecutor General of the MVD. The second man, called Bychkov, was Deputy Chief of GULAG, the main administration of the forced labor camps. One of them, accompanied by numerous Soviet officers, went to one courtyard, and the other to the yard of the neighboring camp. Kuznetsov sat down at the side of Dolghish. There was a moment of silence. "It looks as solemn as Red Square (in Moscow) during a troop review," said one of the men. Then Bychkov rose to his feet. "Comrades, you have made several demands," he began. "Some of the demands are justified and deserve acceptance. However, the Government implemented them even before you wrote them down. Look, here I have the texts of decrees issued by the Government in April. That was only a few weeks ago, and evidently news of them has not reached Kingir yet, but you may rest assured that these instructions will be carried out even here. I am choosing one at random—a decree of April 24, 1954 on the amnesty for juvenile delinquents. Another decree, issued on the same day, provides for the release of invalids and old or sick people

before the expiration of their term, provided they submit their petition for pardon to the camp administration. The same applies to reduction of sentences for good work. The decree does not foresee, it is true, sentence reduction by seven days for each work day, as you demand, but those fulfilling or exceeding the work norm will have their sentences shortened by two or three days for every workday. There is no need to speak of the eight-hour day—it has already been approved. You see, on its own initiative, the Government has worked out plans to alleviate your work and reduce your sentences. Unless I am mistaken, what with the envisaged reductions in sentences, most of you have only a small portion of the term left and have just to prepare for leaving the camp. But you should keep in mind one thing—don't gamble away all these advantages offered to you by some rash action. Be sensible, comrades! Comrade Kuznetsov, who is no doubt a clever man, would give you the same advice. Wouldn't you?" Bychkov turned with a forced smile to Kuznetsov, watching at the same time the other members of the strike committee. One of them asked: "What about a review of the indictments and sentences?"

"Well, comrades, you see, we have also come here to receive your applications for review of sentences. I and General Dolghish will accept them beginning tomorrow."

"When will the bars disappear from the windows?" a woman shouted.

"Will those who shot at us last year be punished?" another voice was heard.

"Will we be permitted to return to our homeland after our release?" asked a man with a Baltic accent.

"There were many questions.

"We shall discuss quite a lot of things during the next few days. We are staying here two more days," said both Soviet generals, as soon as they heard questions concerning the 17 killed and several hundreds crippled in the Kingir camp.

"Bychkov and Dolghish tried to close the meeting, but the prisoners insisted on prompt arrival of members of the Soviet Communist Party Central Committee.

"What is the use of your asking for the appearance of central committee members," said one the generals indignantly. "Both we and your camp commandant act on behalf of the central committee. This is why we have come here to listen to you. Don't imagine that the central committee has so little to do that it can send one of its members here. Before we discuss other matters, we want an answer concerning the discontinuance of the strike. We shall come back tonight to hear your answer and to decide further steps."

"This was the end of the meeting. However, the final word had not been spoken.

In the evening the camp inmates gave it:

"Comrade General! Our imprisoned comrades have authorized us, the strike committee, to declare that we insist on the fulfilment of our demand for the arrival of members of the Party Central Committee. Until their arrival, we refuse to resume work."

"The Moscow representatives evidently had not expected such an answer. They considered new steps. One of them was dividing juvenile camp inmates into different groups. The next morning, 180 of them were summoned out of the camp. All of them believed they would be released, but only 30 were freed, while the rest were sent to a work colony near Kingir and promptly assigned to work brigades. Youths who had not yet left the camp refused to appear before the Moscow committee.

"Thereupon the Moscow men tried their hand at categorizing invalids and tuberculosis patients. After five percent had been declared to come under the category of those to be freed, all activities in this respect were halted.

"The next day, a host of Soviet public prosecutors arrived from Alma Ata, the capital of Kazakhstan, from Karaganda and other distant places. They interrogated the political prisoners on the bloody clashes of last year, prepared minutes, took pictures of whatever material evidence was left on the scene of events and told the prisoners that the culprits had already been imprisoned.

"Several days passed. The camp inmates did not spend them idly.

"In order to inform others about the uprising, they started building a radio transmitter. In their opinion, this would enable them to inform not only other areas of the Soviet Union, but also the free world about the events in Kingir. 'We shall contact the International Red Cross,' said some. 'We shall refute Moscow's lies that no forced labor camps are left in the Soviet Union,' suggested others.

"The claim that all slave camps had been liquidated in the Soviet Union was published in 1954 in some Western newspapers. Only Moscow's campaign of lies could bring about the publication of such a statement in the press of the free

world. We should not let Moscow get away with such a brazen lie, we must have a radio transmitter which can be heard in all of Europe and non-Communist Asia. The voice of the Kingir rebels should pierce the Iron Curtain.' And so it was decided.

"There were outstanding specialists in the Kingir camp. As soon as the need for a transmitter arose, a radio engineer was found. Of course, he was a political prisoner, as was also his young assistant, a Lithuanian.

"X-ray equipment and medical supplies provided the technical basis for the construction of the transmitter. The Lithuanian hastened to perfect himself in the use of the Morse code for English-language broadcasts. An excellent hiding place for the transmitter was found in a remote corner of the women's camp.

"Early in June the first SOS signals of the Kingir mutineers were broadcast, telling of the fate of 13,000 internees.

"The engineers understood that the audibility of their broadcasts would not go far beyond the Kazakhstan steppes. The lack of suitable equipment precluded the building of a more powerful transmitter. [Moreover, it was realized, that as soon as a more powerful transmitter started operation, there would be bolshevik interference with its broadcasts.

"Even as things were, the rebel transmitter had to compete with the camp loudspeaker used by the administration. Several times a day, it addressed the rebels and it was clear that the administration knew fairly well what was going on in the camp although it held only a defensive position. Kuznetsov ordered the erection of barricades. In addition, weapons were forged. Bars removed from the windows were forged into spears, and carbide lamps and explosives were adapted for repelling invaders.

"All this activity was observed from airplanes which flew over the camp every day.

"You will see, we shall stamp out all of you,' barked the administration's loudspeaker in the watchtower.

"Freedom or death' replied the prisoners' loudspeaker. 'If we have to die, we shall die. We would rather blow ourselves up than surrender to you.'

"Moscow watched the developments in Kingir closely, and very seriously appraised every action and statement by the prisoners. For the reports on the disastrous events in Karaganda, Salekhand, Norilsk, Kolyma and Vorkuta had been piling up in Moscow during the past few years.

"The local administration knew that there were excellent chemists among the prisoners, and that the internees had been able to smuggle explosives into the camp from mines and stone quarries.

"Food reserves were available for 40 days. The strike committee rationed them strictly.

"Members of the Party Central Committee did not come, but on the other hand nobody paid any attention to the two generals sent from Moscow.

"Midsummer came. Life in the camp followed the newly established routine; the internal walls were no longer any obstruction. Both men and women did guard duty. The women's post stood at some distance from the armed men whose weapons were however so miserable that Kuznetsov, the one-time Soviet tank commander in Berlin, feared that panic would break out during the first moments of the expected attack. Women mounted guard for the sole reason of encouraging the men during the fight, as it was believed that the latter would not retreat under the eyes of the women. The barricades, built of bricks, clay, scrap iron and wood, could only resist infantry attack. The headquarters of the strike committee were surrounded by a specially built barbed-wire fence.

"In the early hours of June 26th, Bychkov's voice was heard over the loudspeaker:

"Attention! Attention! Troops are entering the camp. I order everybody to leave the barracks!"

"At the same time, hundreds of rockets flared up, casting a ghostly light over the camp area. Tanks emerged from several directions. Some rolled in through the camp gates, crushing the barricades like matchwood, while others broke through the walls. It is not known for sure whether there were seven or more tanks, but within a few moments they controlled the camp. Hiding behind them, infantry men fired at whoever happened to be in the courtyard. One of the first bullets struck Villis Rozenbergs, a former Latvian legionary, while another killed an Estonian woman who stood on a sentry post.

"The tanks set fire to the barracks, smashed their walls and rolled over whatever was in their way. Infantry followed in their wake, dashing into the barracks

and firing at the prisoners whether these were still in their beds or had risen, awakened by the noise.

"Although taken by surprise and half-awake, the most courageous among them fought back. The sound of firing and shouts of fear mingled with the cries of the wounded. The MVD men bayoneted even those who lay on the ground, pierced by bullets. Tank crews fired at prisoners who were at some distance from them.

"Camp No. 2 put up the fiercest resistance. Twice it repelled the attack. Carbide bottles were hurled and home-made grenades exploded against the walls and turrets of the tanks. When the supply of these weapons was exhausted, the men and women in prisoners' garb threw stones against the invaders.

"The desperate fight had been going on for almost four hours. Lithuanian women tried to save the transmitter which a few moments ago had broadcast the last SOS signal, surprising the enemy.

"A few Latvian girls continued the fight in another corner of the camp. One after another they sank down to the ground. The bullet of an MVD man struck Biruta Blums, the daughter of a Latvian war hero, who stood side by side with another Latvian of whom it is only known that she was the mother of two children. The surviving women joined hands and advanced against the tanks. They had neither carbide bottles, nor stones. They marched towards the enemy singing. It was difficult to tell what they sang. Maybe a hymn, maybe a song about their country. The rattle of the tanks drowned their voices.

"The huge tank, grim and ominous, lifted its steel belly in front of the girls. And a moment later it rolled over them. The drunken tank crew laughed.

"General Bychkov, Deputy Chief of the central administration of the forced labor camps, watched the scene from a fourth-floor window in the administration building and directed the 3000 men and the tanks. Only a few hours ago these were opposed by 9000 men and 4000 women, but a four-hour fight had thinned their ranks.

"Bychkov did not act on his own initiative. When Moscow had been asked a few days previously how to proceed against the rebels, it had answered: 'Liquidate them!'

K., a returnee, who told the story of this terrible night at Friedland in the fall of 1955, added: "All the Balts took part in this fight. The number of their fallen and wounded was therefore relatively high."

Five hundred were killed. Another returnee said that if the attack had not come at night, the number of victims would have been much higher. In the darkness and confusion some were eliminated from the ranks in the first moments of the clash, being taken by surprise and disabled for the fight.

The Kingir uprising lasted 42 days.

On June 26th it was ruthlessly quelled. Casualties equalled those of a major battle.

Many of the seriously wounded died of their injuries. On the other hand, many a man whom his comrades had seen fall to the ground during the fight proved to be only wounded and God's grace helped him to recover. This was evidently also the case of Biruta Blums who was considered dead. In the spring of 1956 the news was received in Latvia that she had survived. Little information is available on the fate of the other fighters.

It is only known that the surviving were arrested, tried, and brought in special trains to Kolyma. A special trial was staged for the members of the strike committee who became the leaders of the rebels.

A solidarity strike with the Kingir mutineers commenced in Dzhezkazgan on June 10th. After the Kingir massacre of June 26th, General Bychkov arrived with his tanks in Dzhezkazgan. "Do you want to suffer the same fate as the Kingir rebels?" asked Moscow's executioner.

The twenty thousand Dzhezkazgan camp inmates were not prepared for a fight and called off the strike.

Nevertheless, great changes followed.

A few mutineers who, as foreigners, were due for an early release, returned to the Kingir camp some time after the terrible night; they were greatly surprised at what they saw in their former camp.

Work no longer began at six o'clock in the morning but at eight and ceased at five p.m. Window bars which had disappeared during the mutiny had not been replaced. Numbers had been removed from the clothing of the prisoners. Invalids, disabled persons and juveniles were being released from the camp at a fairly rapid rate. Those who were not released, had their sentences reduced. However, because of the extremely severe sentences most of them had to spend in the camp an additional five or more years.

The administration began to invite theatrical troupes and orchestras to the camp. Men and women were allowed to meet a few times a month at concerts, theatrical performances or dances.

The general mood, however, was still so low that nobody could really enjoy all the new things. It felt strange to dance at a place where not long ago blood had flowed in streams.

The heroism of the persecuted people in Kingir was a hymn to modern man's yearning for freedom and this place became a new link in the chain of freedom uprisings which broke out spontaneously in Soviet camps where terrorism and exploitation resembled that practised in the cemetery of living people in Kazakhstan.

STRIKES AND UPRISINGS IN SOVIET FORCED LABOR CAMPS

[This list is not exhaustive]

Region and Punitive area	Year	Month or season	Duration
KOMI S.S.R.:			
Ust-Ukhta.....	1940		
Ust-Vym.....	1947		
Vozhael.....	1952	Summer.....	
Vorkuta.....	1953	do.....	
	1955	do.....	
URAL REGION:			
Salekharda.....	1950		
Molotov (Perm) area.....	1952	June.....	
Fabrichnoye.....			
Revda/Sverdlovsk.....	1954		
Karabash.....	1954	Summer.....	
Solikamsk.....	1955		
SIBERIA:			
Krasnoyarsk region.....	1952	Fall.....	
	1956	April.....	
Norilsk.....	1953	March-August.....	100 days.
Tayshet.....	1950	Winter.....	
	1954		
Reshoty.....	1954	October.....	
CENTRAL ASIA:			
Dzhezkazgan.....	1947, 1951		
	1953, 1954		
Kingir.....	1954		
Karaganda.....	1947, 1951		
	1953, 1954		
Sherubay Nura.....	1954		
Balkhash.....	1954	Spring and summer.....	
FAR EAST:			
Kolyma.....	1946, 1953		
Sakhalin.....	1954		
EUROPEAN RUSSIA:			
Potma.....	1955	Summer.....	

THE SUPPRESSION OF THE DISSIDENTS

[Excerpted from "Uncensored Russia"]

by Peter Reddaway

American Heritage Press (New York 1972)

THE ALL-RUSSIAN SOCIAL-CHRISTIAN UNION FOR THE LIBERATION OF THE PEOPLE

Between March 14th and April 5th [1968] seventeen Leningrad intellectuals were tried in the Leningrad City Court. Procurator Guseva and Judge Isakova (deputy chairman of Leningrad City Court) took part in the trial.

All the accused were charged under articles 70 and 72 of the Russian Criminal Code. The essence of the charge was participation in the All-Russian Social-Christian Union for the Liberation of the People. [Photographs on p. 279.]

BRIEF EXPOSITION OF THE UNION'S PROGRAMME

The establishment of a democratic system. The head of state is elected by the whole population and is accountable to Parliament. The upper chamber—a *Sobor* (representatives of the clergy)—has a right of veto vis-a-vis the head of state and Parliament. The land belongs to the State and is allocated to private people or collectives (exploitation forbidden); hired labour only permitted on a basis of equality. Enterprises are mostly owned by worker collectives, but the main industries—transport, electronics, etc.—to be state-owned. Basic principle of the economic system—personalism.

STATUTES OF THE UNION

Strict conspiracy, members operating in "groups of three"; each person knows the senior member of his "three" and its second member. In addition, each person recruits new members, creating a new "three" in which he becomes the senior. The head of the organization is not known to the members—in case of need they communicate with him in writing through the senior member of their "three".

In practice the organization engaged only in recruiting new members and distributing literature (the books and copies of books confiscated in searches included those of Djilas, Berdyayev, Vl. Solovyov, [G. von] Rauch's *History of Soviet Russia*, Tibor Meray's *Thirteen Days that shook the Kremlin*—on Hungary in 1956, Gorky's *Untimely Thoughts*, etc., and even [Evgenia] Ginzburg's *Into the Whirlwind*).

The organization was formed in about 1964. By mid-1965 it had some ten members. By this time the Leningrad K.G.B. already knew it existed but did not stop its activities and allowed it to develop and expand (in court Alexander Gidoni appeared as a witness: he had denounced the organization to the K.G.B. in 1965 but was advised to continue to keep in touch with its members).

In February/March 1967 some sixty persons were arrested or detained (not only in Leningrad but also in Tomsk, Irkutsk, Petrozavodsk, etc.).

In November 1967 the Leningrad City Court tried four leaders of the organization (under articles 64, 70 and 72) and sentenced:

Igor Ogurtsov (translator from Japanese, 30 years old) to 15 years of imprisonment; Mikhail Sado (orientalist, 30) to 13 years; Evgeny Vagin (literary critic from Pushkin House [a literary research institute], 30) to 10 years; and [Boris] Averochkin (jurist, 28) to 8 years—all to be served in strict-regime corrective-labour colonies.

The second trial lasted from March 14th to April 5th, 1968. The difference between the people brought into court as accused and those brought in as witnesses consisted basically in the fact that those on trial had engaged in recruiting people—even if only a single person—for the organization. All the accused admitted their

guilt (evidently in the sense of admitting the facts of the charge) but not all of them recanted (particularly Ivoilov, Ivanov, Platonov and Borodin).

The following were sentenced (term of imprisonment shown after each entry in years with term demanded by the Procurator in parentheses):

1. Vyacheslav Platonov, born 1941, orientalist—6(7).
2. Nikolai Ivanov, born 1937, art critic, teacher in Leningrad University—6(7).
3. Leonid Borodin, born 1938, school headmaster from the Luga District in Leningrad Region—6(6).
4. Vladimir Ivoilov, economist (Tomsk), graduate of Leningrad University—2(2) [in fact six years—see *Chronicle* 19].
5. Mikhail Kolosov, born 1937, fitter employed in the Leningrad Gas organization, correspondence course student of the Gorky Literary Institute—4(5).
6. Sergei Ustinovich, born 1938, Leningrad University graduate—3½(4).
7. Yury Buzin, born 1936, engineer, agricultural institute graduate—3(4).
8. Valery Nagorniy, born 1943, engineer in L.I.T.M.O. (Leningrad Institute of Precision Mechanics and Optics)—3(4).
9. Alexander Miklashevich, born 1935, engineer (agricultural institute graduate)—3(3).
10. Yury Baranov, born 1938, engineer (graduate of institute of cine-technicians)—3(4).
11. Georgy Bochevarov, born 1935, Leningrad University graduate—2½(3).
12. Anatoly Sudaryov, born 1939, translator, Leningrad University graduate—2(2).
13. Anatoly Ivlev, born 1937, chemist, Leningrad University graduate—2(3).
14. Vladimir Veretenov, born 1936, chemist, Leningrad University graduate—2(3).
15. Olgerd Zobak, born 1941, L.I.T.M.O. mechanic—14 months, the time already served while under pretrial investigation (1 year).
16. Oleg Shuvalov, born 1938, L.I.T.M.O.—14 months, the time already served (1 year).
17. Stanislav Konstantinov, librarian—14 months, the time already served (1 year).

The trial was characterized by violations of legality similar to those in the Moscow trial [of Galanskov and Ginzburg]:

1. The terms of pre-trial detention exceeded the legal maximum in the case of some of the accused.
2. Admission was by permit to an 'open' trial (although the court was half empty).
3. Most witnesses were ejected from the courtroom immediately after testifying.

It is also not clear why the leaders of the organization were tried separately and why they were tried under article 64 (treason), as well as articles 70 and 72. Was the programme they had drawn up defined as 'a conspiracy aimed at seizing power'? If so, this was clearly illegal. In the circumstances of the trial of the first group of four every kind of illegality could have been committed, since nothing was known of the trial until it was over and it was, apparently, completely closed.

It is reliably known that no one was charged with having connections with N.T.S., nor with engaging in currency transactions, nor with possessing arms.

This account of the two trials fits well with the only other substantial source yet available, an anonymous article of 1969 apparently written by a member of the Union. This confirms that twenty-one people were sentenced, adding that twenty-nine in all stood trial and that the case materials filled over a hundred volumes. It also states that Union members were indeed charged with participation in 'a conspiracy aimed at seizing power', and that the Union's programme stood for armed revolution, although its activity had not reached the stage of acquiring any arms. The article provides a fascinating analysis of the Union's social composition, ideological development, programme and activities, and of the reasons for its betrayal. There is sufficient similarity between its programme and that of the 'Democrats of Russia, the Ukraine and the Baltic Lands' (see p. 173) to make it possible that the latter group includes people previously associated with the Union.

In any case, the next development was predictable enough:

In May and June 1968 the Russian Supreme Court considered the appeals of the Leningrad members of the All-Russian Social-Christian Union. The sentences on all those convicted were confirmed. Ogurtsov, sentenced to fifteen years' imprisonment, and Sado, sentenced to thirteen years' imprisonment, will, according to the sentence, spend the first five years of their terms under a prison régime. They are in the prison at Vladimir.

The other accused are now in camp 11 of the Mordovian camps: their address is: Mordovskaya A.S.S.R., st. Potma, p/o Yavas, p/ya ZhKh 385/11.

We have already met Ogurtsov, Sado, Platonov and Borodin in Vladimir prison and the camps (see pp. 207, 220). In addition, No. 9 recorded in 1969: 'Sado has been transferred from Vladimir prison to camp 3 of the Mordovian complex', but it did not explain why the transfer took place early. No. 10 then reported his further transfer to camp 17-a. This was where he became friends with a man of whom the Chronicle wrote:

Alexander Petrov (pseudonym Agatov), the Leningrad poet and author of the words of the song 'Dark Night' (from the film *The Two Warriors*), was convicted in Moscow in February 1969 under article 70 of the Russian Criminal Code for a book he had written (the title is unknown).

In a document written in Mordovia in late 1969 Petrov gives the date of his closed trial as January 7th-8th and the basis for his seven-year sentence as his 'poems about the tyranny of the Beria times, written in that period'. Here he also describes Sado as 'a man with a wonderful heart, a fine mind and an unbreakable will', and in a later document he writes in detail of Sado's remarkable life-story. In autumn 1970 Petrov was transferred to Vladimir for his pains, along with Borodin. Earlier he had served over twenty years in camps, getting out in 1967, having a year of freedom and publishing a few works, before returning.

PRISONER ENCOUNTERS

(A true story by Aleksandr Petrov-Agatov)

[Excerpts translated from Grani, Nos. 82-84, 1972]

In the year of our Lord, The summer of 1969.

Trouble comes unexpectedly. Arrests are no exception. Nobody warns of them either. Particularly in a Soviet country, where there are very many beautiful words about freedom and brotherhood, and very little conscience and honor.

Having already spent more than twenty years in prison and having just come out a year ago, I never imagined that I would be arrested again. But no. I was grabbed and arrested.

"Do you know what you were arrested for?", asked Major Khabibulin, after introducing himself, and looked meaningfully at the manuscripts. I understood that he decided to make things clear from the start.

"Is it possible that it's on account of my poems?" I said with surprise.

"These poems are worse than an atom bomb", he cut me short. "Right now we won't discuss anything. I would like you to gather your thoughts and simply rest. Here is the order for your arrest signed by the procurator. Times have changed, we don't just grab people, don't be afraid. You won't be imprisoned in the Lubyanka. Generally speaking, we don't have any people in prisons. You will be taken to Lefortovo. It is now an isolation ward for political prisoners."

"You mean to say . . . a prison . . .", I corrected him.

"An isolation ward. We don't have prisons any more."

I was taken to Lefortovo not in a "Zim" [brand name of a car made in the USSR] but in a "paddy wagon". I hope the reader will not miss the opportunity of learning of this "marvel of the twentieth century". Those friendly first-aid cars, equipped with sirens, which go everywhere. In Stalin's time they were disguised with the words "BREAD", "MEAT" or simply "FOODSTUFFS" written on them, and not without reason, I believe: these cars, loaded to the gills, transported from prison to prison the "products of the epoch" [a play on words, the Russian word for foodstuffs being "produkty", meaning also products—Translator's Note].

This was my first time in Lefortovo. I already knew that this was a political prison. Rumors had it that here as in Lubyanka and at the Butyrki people were shot without trial or investigation. However, people were also sent to the next world after being tried.

. . . Sado was also soon taken away from me, but I had time to find out from him that a large group of Social-Christians was arrested in Leningrad in February 1967. This group was headed by Igor Vyacheslavovich Ogurtsov, who according to Sado was a very pure, courageous, well educated and—above all—religious man.

"All the people in this group are believers and are highly intellectual", Yuriy Yukhanovich assured me. "My brother Mikhail, who is Ogurtsov's first assistant,

is an orientalist. Platonov is one too. Nikolay Viktorovich Ivanov is an art historian who taught at the Leningrad University and who not long before his arrest had returned from Ethiopia. A clever fellow! What a clever fellow! Vladimir Fedorovich Ivoylov taught political economy at the Tomsk University. Mikhail Borisovich Knosov, a poet, was a student by correspondence at a literary institute of writers. Georgiy Nikolayevich Bochevarov is an historian. And Vanin? Evgeniy Aleksandrovich [Vanin]—well he is a very special person!

I was shaken. In Russia, in the sixties, and a military-political organization! [Following sentence smudged and illegible—Translator's Note]

"Don't be obstinate, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich," repeated Major Sedov for the nth time. "Why should you protect Boris Slutskiy? He is a Jew and a Zionist. And you are a Russian. After all we know that he is anti-Soviet. Just confirm this to us. And tell me what you know about Tvardovskiy."

"But I saw Tvardovskiy only once, and then only in his official capacity as chief editor of 'Novyy Mir' [a literary journal—Translator's Note]. As to Slutskiy, I know him only very superficially."

"My goodness, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich," interrupted the procurator, "aren't you tired of being in prison? What good is all this to you? Help us—and you'll be a free man."

It all ended with Lieutenant-General Lyalin, Head of the Moscow Committee on Security, appearing one day in person at the interrogation. This obese swine was infinitely frank.

"Here is my party card," and he pulled a blood-red little booklet from his pocket. "See? If you will tell us all about the writers and how the manuscripts get abroad, I guarantee you your freedom tomorrow. This card is my assurance to you."

. . . I was tried at Christmas in the old manner. Naturally, in camera. Besides Zagryaznina who transmitted my manuscripts to the KGB, my daughter, who in her innocence admitted that she had heard my poems, and a large number of guards, there was nobody else. Also, there were two security committee characters. Of course, in civilian clothes, silent, but their spirit hovered above the procurator's and judge's armchairs. I say "armchairs" because the impression was that the ones who conducted the trial were not the people but the armchairs. I refused the services of the attorney. The day before the trial, a middle-aged woman with large yellow teeth, brightly painted lips, and a thick cigarette in her mouth, came to the prison (she was the defending attorney) and said to me: "I advise you to admit your guilt. . . . You will then get less time."

The procurator made a long speech. Time and again he pronounced the cast iron words: ideology, ideologic diversion, class struggle. . . .

Then came the verdict: "I ask for 7 years."

Naturally, I would not admit that I was guilty. And I told the court everything that I thought of it and the investigation, and that long ago I came to the conclusion that the worst enemy of the Soviet state was the Soviet state itself. The greatest reward for my critical outpourings were my daughter's words. Aleshka's voice rang out in the hall:

"Marvellous, Daddy!"

There were the three of us: in Ryazan' the two Armenians were put into a stolypin (a passenger railroad car divided into cages). They were still very young men, and had been brought from Armenia. I only found out that they were both engineers, graduates of the Erevan Technological Institute, the first one, Ashot Khachaturyan, sentenced to ten years for betraying his country, the second, Stepan Zatvokhyan, to four years for anti-Soviet agitation. Both were from good families, used to the good things in life, and throughout the trip continuously expressed their indignation at the inhuman, as they said, ways of the KGB.

As soon as we had changed into prison garb and entered the zone, they were whisked away by some Armenians (for here there was a great variety of nationalities), and I began to be besieged by the Slavs. Naturally, I was anxious above all to meet Andrey Donatovich Sinyavskiy, who as I found out while still at the transit prison, was here and about whom I had heard so many different reports. Therefore, when one of the messengers, who said that his name was Mikhail Konukhov, said: "We invite you to join our group of three: Sinyavskiy, engineer-designer Derunov, and myself," I had no reason to refuse. But Konukhov's appearance somewhat disturbed me. He looked like a criminal: shifty eyes, an earthen complexion, the expressionless face of a drug addict, tattooed arms. "He probably shouted off some anti-Soviet slogans or wrote a leaflet in blood, just to get out of the criminal prisoner's camp," I thought to myself.

"Andrey Donatovich will soon be here. Please sit down," greeted me a young man with a small reddish beard like a child's spade, soft features, and blue eyes which, it appeared, nothing could astound, since they had seen everything. "I'm very grateful to you for having come. I myself am from Moscow. My family name is Derunov, my name and patronimic, Mikhail Evgen'evich. My father is a professor. I am a design engineer. A leader of a small group. Of course, democratic. I've been given seven years, charged under article 70. And here now is Andrey Donatovich. . . ."

The conversation was hard in getting started, and during the first few minutes I almost openly scrutinized Sinyavskiy. He was a bit cross in one eye, his teeth were yellow and, I thought, disintegrating; his face exhausted and deeply lined, long before its time (he was forty-five)—an intelligent, spiritual face. He spoke little and was modest in his behavior. Nevertheless he remarked:

"When I arrived, I had no respite from the curious. . . . I was being scrutinized like a bride brought before the bridegroom and his relatives."

"A well-known name," I remarked not knowing exactly what to say.

"Well-known, yes. But undeservedly so. I myself appreciate that this isn't honest fame which comes to a real writer. I was brought in on a wave, and as everyone knows, a wave brings in anything."

I did not sense any posing in Sinyavskiy's words and I liked his sober evaluation of himself.

On that occasion, I believe, we parted without any definite ideas about each other, but a grain of sympathy for Andrey Donatovich was planted in my heart.

. . . The next day, when I returned from work (I was sent to do some of the most difficult work there) I was called to the headquarters, to the office of the chief of operations. A major in horn-rimmed glasses was at the table, and nearby, next to the wall, a lieutenant-colonel. Both were in the uniform of the cavalry, but without spurs: Soviet gendarmes shouldn't make too much noise, they move silently.

"You've been invited, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich, so that we may get acquainted. Please sit down. I am the chief of the KGB Administrative Office. My name is Postnikov. And this," he nodded in the direction of the lieutenant-colonel with his balding head, "is my deputy."

I didn't hear the name. Anyhow it had no meaning. I already mentioned that the secret police have no face. Neither do they have names. Like dogs, they have only nicknames and go from one master to another.

"How was the trip? Did you settle down?"

Each one of them had a piece of paper before him.

"I would prefer it if you didn't trouble yourself with polite questions. Can anyone have any doubts about the cultural level of our gendarmerie? Please come to the point."

"Are you upset about something?" screeched Postnikov.

So I had to answer the questions. The questions were mostly those of the curious: how many copies of my books had been printed abroad, how much money did I have in my bank account, which journals in the Soviet Union had published my works? I was also asked to state my political and philosophical positions.

I took advantage of the situation and painted a picture of near catastrophe for the Soviet regime:

"Alright, but don't express your ideas to any of the other prisoners. Bear in mind that anyway we will find out what you said and to whom and this will only add to your problems."

And again as in Lefortovo:

"What good are they to you? And by the way, I can tell you with whom you had met yesterday and today and what you had talked about. . . ."

And he repeated almost the entire conversations I had had with both groups.

"So you see," concluded Postnikov didactically, looking me fixedly in the eye, "we know everything and we will continue to know everything."

During the next few days I became convinced that the camp was swarming with informers. It was especially this that created an atmosphere of nervous tension, distrust, and was responsible for the formation of small, tight, closed groups. Everyone feared each other. Suspicion reached schizophrenic proportions, and people often warned one another:

"Be more careful with that one."

"Don't say too much."

"He's not a bad fellow, but he works for the management, and one does not work for the management for nothing."

"That one there is always getting cigarettes and coffee in his parcels."

At the conclusion of the conversation I asked Postnikov to return to me all the manuscripts which were taken away from me at the entrance to the zone. These manuscripts were already checked by the Security Committee in Moscow, and there was a special statute in the prison regulations which covered this.

"Moscow manages its own affairs, and we manage ours. . . . We'll take a look and will then return them. Don't worry. If you have any problems, let us know; we are not putting you in the same category with the military criminals."

"By the way," said I, "why don't you let them go. They've been sitting here for twenty years and more. They are living corpses. . . ."

"Dear me, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich. You don't know what dangerous people they are. They can't be let out. They are in blood up to their necks. . . ."

But several months later one of these "dangerous" fellows admitted to me his spying and told me frankly:

"Do you know what Postnikov told me when he recruited me into his service? You, he said, are not dangerous to us. The ones who are dangerous to us are those. . . the educated ones . . . with the lily-white hands. Those who are in for four or seven years, not for twenty-five. The thinkers and talkers. But you—you are our fellows."

And these were not empty words.

All services in the camps for political prisoners are rendered by former policemen and Beria men. They are in the councils of the collectives and are the trustees for the communist party.

Next day I was visited by Nagorniy and Ivoylov. They were the first swallows of that military-political arm of the Social-Christian Party of which Yuriy Yukhanovich Sado spoke to me in Lefortovo. I spent the entire first three days inquiring about them, did obtain some information, but was too shy to approach them myself. Both were young and somehow glowing; radiating warmth, they brought a breath of something fresh and pure into my corner (my cot was in a corner at the end of the barracks).

"Valeriy Ivanovich . . ."

"Vladimir Fedorovich . . ."

The first one, with blue eyes and very fine, almost transparent features, was Nagornyy. The second one, reserved and more subdued and gloomier, was Ivoylov.

All of them who were in that zone had gathered together. I say "that zone" because there was yet a seventeenth camp. Several from the group were there. Three of them were: the orientalist Vyacheslav Mikhaylovich Platonov, the literary historian Evgeniy Aleksandrovich Vagin, and a former director of schools, Leonid Ivanovich Borodin, who according to hearsay was a very interesting person who had been in Saransk for so-called "prophylactic treatment": every year three to four persons were brought there for a period of two months for re-education in order to change their convictions.

The leaders [of the group] Igor Vyacheslavovich Ogurtsov and Mikhail Yukhanovich Sado were serving their sentences in a prison in Vladimir.

. . . Seven persons seated behind a large table, brought in from somewhere especially for the occasion. Besides Nagornyy and Ivoylov there were Boris Anatol'evich Averechkin, a grandson of one of the first Soviet admirals, with a reserved expression and a face framed in a thick dark beard; Mikhail Borisovich Konosov, still just a boy, with soft cheeks and beautiful brown eyes, very charming, a poet, who admitted that he would prefer being addressed not only by his first name but his patronimic also; Georgiy Nikolayevich Bochevarov, an historian, very kind and frank but trying to appear withdrawn and very much a man of principle; and Yuriy Petrovich Baranov, an engineer, about thirty-three to thirty-five years old, phlegmatic, with a tattoo on his right arm, with an elongated, well-groomed face, grey before its time. There was also a man who looked very much like czar Nicolas the Second, with purblind, runny eyes, whose name we did not know. And finally, there was Sudarev, a man of medium height, who was continuously steeped in thought, and as I found out later, dreaming of becoming a writer.

Later I found that the questionnaire played an important role in the organization. They had some very substantial archives and personal files, which affected the organization adversely when it was uncovered and crushed. My compatriots at first meeting obviously did not want to reveal all about themselves. After some "questioning" they asked me to tell them what I thought of their organization, to share with them my prognosis of the future, to read some of the poetry for which I had been arrested.

The next day I made the acquaintance of Vagin. Unfortunately Platonov and Borodin were driven right past our camp straight to camp no. 17.

Evgeniy Aleksandrovich [Vagin] made a very pleasant impression on me. Tall, graceful, neat even in prison garb, he radiated nobility of character, intelligence, and grace of manner. Is it possible to radiate a grace of manner? Judging by Vagin, yes.

Together with Sinyavskiy, Derunov, and the ever-present Konukhov, I spent no less than two hours with Evgeniy Aleksandrovich. We discussed literature, art, politics. Despite all his modesty it was impossible not to notice his erudition and high intellect. One felt that this man did not select a world outlook which was popular at the moment, but had worked it out for himself. It was the first time I heard a literary historian (and Evgeniy Aleksandrovich was a highly qualified literary historian, specializing in Dostoyevskiy) evaluate Gorkiy correctly:

"Awful language," said Vagin. "Is it possible that a Russian writer can use such language? Furthermore, he's so nasty, that Gorkiy."

I asked Evgeniy Aleksandrovich to describe, in the few minutes that remained, the "prophylactic treatment" in Saransk. What was it?

"A joke," smiled Vagin. "Local writers and other Mordovian luminaries come by at the request of the KGB, naturally, and try to convert us. Sometimes they even take us in private cars to restaurants and shops in town. Look how well and in what a civilized manner the Soviet people live. There is bread, the movies are spinning away, no charge for entering a restaurant. Jazz. And sometimes there's even cognac. . . . What more could one want?"

Platonov asked to be taken to church. He wanted to confess and to receive the eucharist.

Colonel Arbuzov (deputy chief of the Mordovian KGB) was momentarily non-plussed by Vyacheslav Mikhaylovich's [Platonov's] request. Then he smiled jauntily and said firmly: "We will take you! Certainly we will take you!"

But of course he [Platonov] never did go.

"A Chekist [a member of the Cheka, i.e. the secret police—Translator's note] lies the way a thief steals, the way a friar. . . ." said Konukhov.

This time Mishel was in his element. He obviously knew what he was talking about.

. . . Without exception, all the Petersburgers * in zone eleven had gathered around the Easter table. Andrey Donatovich and I were also invited. Besides coffee and candy there was nothing else on the table.

Evgeniy Aleksandrovich, who headed the table said thrice: "Christ has risen!" Everyone rose, and crossing themselves responded in unison: "In truth He has risen!"

It was spring outside. The earth was warming up. Hearts too could not but warm up. I looked at the faces around me. They were all solemn; a ray of sunlight shimmered upon them.

Vagin made a short speech. Its gist was that those who had gathered around the table were Russia's salt of the earth, and that he believed in the country's rebirth. In the nation's rebirth. And of the people sitting at this table.

I don't know why, but I felt like crying. As before, I had a great affection for Vagin and all those who were here, and didn't for a single moment doubt that Evgeniy Aleksandrovich, Nikolay Viktorovich, Georgiy Nikolaevich, and Vladimir Fedorovich—all those sitting around the table—were destined to build a new Russia; but I still felt like crying.

King Solomon, when he learned that Kitovras (?) began crying on seeing a happy young pair of newlyweds emerge from a church, asked: "Why did you cry?" "I foresaw that one of them would perish the next day," answered the wise prophet.

I am not a prophet, and I cannot foresee people's futures. But even then, at that table, I knew that these were today's Russia's best people. Not yet the salt of the earth. Those around the Easter table were brothers.

They *could become* the salt of the earth, I thought, if they suffer much, become masters of themselves, and learn how to love.

Were there any other interesting people in the camp? In zone eleven alone, one thousand four hundred prisoners lived in misery. There were very few intellectually

* i.e. natives or residents of St. Petersburg, the pre-revolutionary name for Leningrad. The author uses this term instead of "Leningraders" to indicate their identification with pre-revolutionary Russia and their non-acceptance and opposition to the present Soviet regime—Translator's note.

interesting people, and none equal to the Petersburgers or to Sinyavskiy. Nevertheless, there were many people with interesting, and in some cases legendary lives. Vasily Illarionovich Stotsenko, a former communist and chief of the planning department of the Krasnodonugol' Trust, an engineer by training, mayor of Krasnodon under the German occupation, but at present a quasi-corps, has been languishing now in prison camps for twenty-three years. He was under interrogation for several years in the Lubyanka, questioned by a gendarme in a Chekist [secret police] uniform who looked like and resembled in spirit the writer Aleksandr Fadeyev, author of the notorious novel "The Young Guards".

Vasily Illarionovich, a rather intelligent man, swears that he had never heard of any "Young Guards", that he did not consider himself guilty nor ever would, because when the Soviet troops retreated, the party organization in Krasnodon ordered him to remain behind with the occupation forces for undercover work. But since nobody from the underground ever came to join him, he decided that he would rather become mayor than die in a concentration camp.

Ivan Nikolayevich Cherenkov, who served much of his time with Stotsenko, had been rotting in USSR MVD corrective-labor camps for just as many years. Until the occupation, he was chief accountant at the same Trust. Under the Germans he became senior investigator for the police, investigating political affairs only.

"Communists and commissars," honestly admitted Ivan Nikolayevich [sic]. "I never had anything to do with 'The Young Guards'. And anyway there weren't any of them around. There were some young fellows, hooligans. They stole packages from cars and sold stolen cigarettes at the market. The police warned them several times. But they would not listen. Finally, shortly before Christmas, the hooligans stole some Christmas parcels sent to the soldiers and officers. Naturally they were arrested, and since this coincided with the retreat of the German armies, they were shot. Without my participation. I managed to evacuate. I was already in the American zone in Italy, and quite safe, when I was asked to the headquarters and told that in accordance with an agreement made between Stalin, Roosevelt and Churchill, I was to be handed over to the Soviet authorities as having committed especially grave crimes against humanity. I spent five years in the Lubyanka. They all wanted to know about the Krasnodon organization known as 'The Young Guards'. At the inquest I answered each time: There was no such organization. And each time I was told: You will stay here until you show us that there was such an organization. So I showed them. After all, in that famous joke about the 10th grade student who was grabbed by the Chekists (secret police) for unreliability, the student finally admitted that it was he who wrote 'Eugene Onegin' [Pushkin's masterpiece—Translator's Note]. So I too admitted that there was such a thing as the 'Young Guards', and that I had conducted an investigation of it. By the way, Koshevoy's mother became Fadeyev's mistress when the latter came there to write his story. She had a child by him" Thus ended his story—the quiet introvert with the horsy teeth.

Cherenkov is now in zone seventeen. He works in a clothes factory, checking for defects. The Chekists (secret police) asked him to keep his eyes open for anti-Soviet leaflets stuffed into dress and coat sleeves by malefactors.

The cool, calm, and collected Kalmyk, Erdni Batiyevich Dorozhiyev, a man of his word and scrupulous in his accounts with others, who had worked for "Smersh" (the military counter-intelligence) and the fascist Abwehr, had become a dental technician in camp. He always had money and even "no-loss promissory notes", as the three percent gold loans were called. He was not greedy, always willing to help, and hated cheating. His sentence—twenty-five years.

In general, there is a tremendous number of investigators, policemen, and secret service men. Soviet, German, those without any nationality, stateless, Beria men and Abakum men.

Anakhashiyev, the former chief of the Azerbaydzhan KGB, always very, very clean, and with a wedge-shaped beard, was here too; they say he had shot more than one person in his office. He walked around very little, preferring to sit in the corner like a safe. You couldn't get a word out of him, but his chest was decorated with an SVP pin, the internal security section's acronym. Some people without their insignia are like billygoats without horns—and what is a billygoat without its horns?

For my poems "In the Land of Mordovia" I was obliged to spend five days in solitary confinement. Following one all-camp search, which used to be performed regularly, I was invited in for a talk by Major Krut' and a young lieutenant by the name of Ershov, who had exchanged his teaching profession for a policeman's uniform, both of them with the KGB.

"We warned you, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich, that we would punish you for anti-Soviet poems or any form of anti-Soviet propaganda", began Krut' without any preliminaries, rolling his lackluster eyes. "You can't hide anything from us, Soviet Chekists [secret police men]. Are these your poems?" "Mine," I replied firmly, "How is it that you," interrupted Ershov, "a cultured person, a talented poet, can write something like this?" "Exactly," added Krut', approaching me. "I see no point in discussing this with you," I said. For a few minutes there was silence. "Then," said the major turning sharply and directing himself toward the table, "you will have to spend five days in solitary confinement." "I'm ready." "Just for a few poems, *these* poems!" he exclaimed.

The order that they showed me before placing me in the stone box stated: "For systematic anti-Soviet propaganda, which negatively affects the contingent."

This made me remember captain Kolodochka, chief of another forced-labor camp. Once when he walked into a Russian language class at the camp school, he saw this word, unfamiliar to the unlettered on the blackboard. "Contingent? Hmm?" And puffing up like a frog, he began squawking at the teacher: "I won't allow it! Revealing state secrets?! I won't allow it! Erase the word 'contingent' immediately."

In solitary confinement I went on a hunger strike, unable to reconcile myself with the thought that normal people could punish a person with solitary confinement for his poems. Lermontov was banished by the czar to Pyatigorsk [a famous spa in the Caucasus—Translator's note] for open incitement to rebellion, for urging the overthrow of the autocracy. Again I remembered Catherine, and her conversation with a prominent painter: it was not under the monarchy that the soul's high and noble aspirations were oppressed, that the creations of the intellect, poetry and the arts were victimized. The Shakespeares, the Molières flowered under their magnanimous protection; but Dante could not find any place in his republican motherland. True geniuses arose under the brilliance and power of monarchs and royal states, not under the hideous political systems and terror which never gave the world a single poet. Poets and painters are a special breed, they bring only peace and wonderful quiet into the soul, not agitation and grumbling discontent. The learned, the poets and the artists—are the pearls and diamonds in the imperial crown, they decorate and add to the brilliance of the age. . . . [words obliterated—Translator's note]

The next day after I declared my hunger strike, the head of the unit, a young puppet-like lieutenant came to see us: he turned whichever way he was pulled. He was later followed by Major Spirin, the deputy political administrator, a man with a face yellow and wrinkled like a dry pear.

I did not end my hunger strike, but neither was I released from solitary confinement before the specified five days had expired. This was for the best, as everything always is, wherein lies the ideal wisdom of the Creator.

On the day of the public baths I made the acquaintance of Yakov Berg, who at the time was confined to his cell for six months for his uncompromising anti-Soviet views.

This was a very honest and courageous Jew. He, too, had a beard, but a large one, like Marx's though of a more uncertain color—neither red, nor white, nor black, nor sandy. All these colors, apparently, had to be mixed to produce the color of Berg's beard. He treasured his beard as he did his convictions. On one occasion, when his eighty-year old mother arrived for a visit (which was before he was transferred to solitary confinement, when no visits are allowed) the Chekists propositioned Yakov, in the form of an ultimatum, to shave off his beard.

"If you don't shave it, you won't get the visit."

But he didn't shave it. And they gave him the visit. They had to give it to him, otherwise a certain group of political prisoners would have created a disturbance. Though not many, there were several prisoners, who, in defiance of Soviet obscurantism, were capable of honorable behavior. The Petersburgers Leonid Borodin, a talented poet and an intelligent historian, was placed in solitary confinement for refusing to attend lectures in political indoctrination. The next day none of the Petersburgers appeared for work. They were supported by the communards headed by Khakhayev, a liberal group under Gragosh.

Arriving at a fast trot from Saransk came the KGB "cavalrymen", the procurator and the others.

Leonid Ivanovich who, even when roped in, refused to listen to the balderdash, was released from the cell, and for a while those who did not want to absorb Marxist-Leninist ideas were left alone.

I now return to Berg. He was the only person among the political prisoners, who ostentatiously refused to accept food on holidays celebrating the Revolution, and who refused to do any kind of work for the Soviet regime. He went on hunger strikes on any pretext, giving the Chekists to understand that his entire being was against the Soviet regime. Hunger was the only weapon left to him in his chains. And he used it continuously.

While in the eleventh zone I tried to make the acquaintance of the Tikhonovites. The reader no doubt knows of this Russian Orthodox group. My attempt was unsuccessful.

Orlovich, whom I approached, had a beard like all the other Tikhonovites. Their beards were all of the same color, dark red and long, some almost to the waist. He asked me: "Are you from the Cheka [secret police]?"

The always quiet and grave Orlovich worked as a male nurse in the infirmary barracks. Only a very few were willing to look after dying old men who could not control their bodily functions. There was a constant stench in the infirmary barracks, but Orlovich worked diligently and was kind to these unfortunates.

"What do you mean from the Cheka?" I asked without first quite understanding his question, because I was so flabbergasted by it. "Don't you know me?"

"Only God knows everything. You, of course are a prisoner. I can see that. But what's in your soul?" And answering himself, he said: "Well, that's another matter."

Resentment and pain overcame me. "You are no believer," I shouted. Then I left.

I was wrong. We are never right when angry and full of resentment. For then our senses are clouded. Orlovich was a very religious man, but I understood that only later when he and I were together in zone seventeen.

It was easier to get to know the Jehovah's Witnesses. There were quite a few of them in camp and they pursued their teaching with great zeal. They always had an enormous amount of religious material, mainly sermons, lectures and various issues of their publication, "The Watchtower" [published in Russian—Translator's note]. Of course there were also the Old and New Testaments which they knew how to hide. And when the Chekists found these books, the Jehovah's Witnesses never gave them up without a fight.

Karl Yasovetskiy told me that when they came to arrest him and began searching his place, his ten-year old daughter Galia grabbed the Bible from the table, clutched it to her breast, and shouted excitedly: "Kill me, but I won't let you have it! I won't let you take away God's Word!" And when the father was led away, she said: "Dad, remain faithful, otherwise death is better."

Dmitriy Zarubin and Vasilii Patrushev were highly critical of the teachings of the Jehovah's Witnesses. "One of those very ancient old men," Dmitriy told us, "after he dared ask God: 'What are the Jehovah's Witnesses? Explain, O Lord!' had the following dream: a man is carrying a vessel with milk. He then takes some manure and mixes it in with the pure milk—God's Word—and passes it out to the people. The old man then says: this is who the Jehovah's Witnesses are."

Despite all this they were mercilessly thrown into prison. All of them were in camp for the second or third time.

For several years now, but apparently without success, Igor Vasil'yevich Belik who was here for his participation in the Novocherkassk uprising, has been learning the facts of camp life. The other participants in the uprising, who numbered more than five hundred, were sent to Komi [Komi ASSR—Translator's note].

Zinoviy Anatol'yevich Troitskiy, a candidate of jurisprudence who before his arrest apparently worked at the Perm University, was one of my new acquaintances. He and his wife were arrested for their membership in the NTS [National Labor Union]. The wife recently completed her term.

I was extremely fond of Volodya Krivtsov. He grew up in the camp, having already served twenty years. He was about to be released, and charmed everyone with his ingenuity and optimism.

"It's the end for the communists! Don't you see my friends that these bastards are on the edge of a precipice? . . ."

He was very Russian, with no education, but quite intelligent. Watching and listening to him, one became once again convinced that understanding, enlightenment, and learning are God-given. Given only by Him. That is why simple people with God's light upon them are the bearers of true culture.

. . . Thus, I know not for what reasons, political or economic, it was decided in Moscow that the political camp in the eleventh zone should be closed down and

that criminal prisoners should be moved into it. We found that out in the last days of June. We lived as though we were on wheels. On the twentieth we didn't even finish our day at the plant (which normally ended at five o'clock), and after lunch started shoving our stuff out into the living area, which became a veritable railroad station. Here and there were bags, suitcases, sacks, knapsacks. Everyone was trying to find out where we would be going. There were three destinations: the third zone, the seventeenth zone, and the nineteenth zone; criminal elements were being moved to our zone from the latter. All these zones were in Mordovia. This entire land is one continuous stretch of watchtowers, barbed wire, and wooden fences.

Ivanov and I were sent to the seventeenth zone, Andrey Donatovich [Sinyavskiy] to the third, and Vagin and Ivoylov to the nineteenth. On the evening of the last day and the entire next morning Sinyavskiy and I spent the entire time together, discussing just about everything. Both of us prayed, both of us cried. Before he reached the check point Andrey Donatovich looked back no less than ten times: he couldn't but feel my eyes on him as he moved away. I believe he won't forget my hands which blessed him either.

On the afternoon of June twenty-ninth, the prisoners were already loaded into twenty specially equipped trucks, and those who were heading for zone seventeen had started on their way.

I was in one of those trucks, sitting with my legs crossed under me. Next to me was Orlovich. Before us stretched the forest and the bumpy road ahead. To this day there are still very few roads in Russia. Right in front of us in the truck stood two men armed with machine guns. They were somehow ashamed to look us straight in the face and they kept glancing aside. The machine guns, like those in the court house, were directed at us at an angle. The machine guns were staring straight at us.

I was going to the seventeenth zone willingly, hoping to meet there both Galanskov and Ginzburg about whom I had heard so much. I also wanted to meet Daniel. I had met Yuliy Markovich [Daniel] only once; that was when I was escaping and managed to work illegally as a researcher for the minister of culture of the Chechen-Ingush republic. It was then that I was introduced to Daniel by the Chechen poetess Raisa Salgimuradovna Akhmatova, now chairman of the writers' organization of the republic, who was then very favorable to the poet. Working for the Chechen-Ingush Republic publishing house, I had, at Akhmatova's request, helped Daniel conclude an agreement for the translation of the poems of several Chechen and Ingush poets.

All the prisoners in the eleventh zone who knew Daniel spoke very warmly of him. Yuliy, they said, was uncompromising with the authorities, did not hide his convictions, and was honest and simple in his behavior with his friends. He was disliked by the Chekists, and he was continuously either in solitary confinement or restricted to his cell.

After hearing this I was naturally impatient to know Daniel better; furthermore, I also wanted to hear some of his poems.

I had heard much good of Platonov and Borodin too.

But this time the Chekists again played a cruel joke on us. They weren't such fools as to bring together political prisoners from the eleventh and seventeenth zones. It is the communists above all who know the formula for "divide and rule."

This was not very apparent in the eleventh zone, where there were 1400 prisoners but in a small zone such as ours, where there was only one two-story building for prisoners, several administration buildings, and only 350 prisoners, there were no secrets.

In the morning there was no water either in the wash-basins or drinking water in the barrels. The herring was rotten. Among the "seventees" (as those sentenced under paragraph 70 were called) there was grumbling. And when we came to work, a real shouting broke out.

Leaflets calling the prisoners to refuse work, to sabotage, etc., appeared in the living quarters. They were signed RPP—which immediately was deciphered as the Russian Progressive Party.

At work no one did anything. People gathered in groups, warming themselves in the sun. The administration was taken aback. After lunch members of the Cheka administration arrived, and towards the evening—investigators from Saransk. The officer of the day had no time to call out the prisoners. The informers who knew nothing, because everyone knew them, were the first to be called. Then, all those who in the eyes of the Cheka were suspect, that is the "Peterburgers," myself, and rebels of the type of Vyacheslav Kuzin were called. All had but one answer: we know nothing, we saw nothing.

In general I refused to answer questions, and demanded the procurator's sanction for our investigations. Ivanov and Bochevarov did the same. But the Chekists would not give up and called everyone systematically for questioning, using samples of handwriting as evidence. This produced another wave of protests: numerous appeals were sent to the procurator about the legality of the above action, as though legality ever existed in the USSR.

Finally the Chekists were obliged to give up. The investigation of the leaflets was dropped. But the camp administration didn't get anywhere about making the prisoners work; as before we sat in the sun and read books.

... On one occasion the enraged Garkushev tried to overturn a mug of coffee with his foot. He hardly made it out of the zone. And again a crowd of authorities arrived. This time the entire leadership of the Administration, except for Gromov, the chief. Great in the past, he was going down hill lately, and he tried to keep apart.

Whereas the influence of the "Peterburgers" was hardly felt in the overall mass of the prisoners, in the eleventh zone, here, Ivanov and Bochevarov immediately became the center of attention of the youth. People went to them, listened to them, imitated them. This could not but become known to the authorities, and the chief of the operations division with his retinue approached Nikolay Viktorovich.

"What are your complaints toward the administration?" he asked.

Very objectively, supported by evidence, Ivanov outlined the situation: poor food, rotten herring, lack of food-stuffs in the camp store, irregular newspaper delivery, bad public baths, and the impossibility of fulfilling the work norm because none of the prisoners had ever sewn any mittens before. It was impossible for anyone of them to produce the required sixty pairs of mittens.

The lieutenant-colonel sniffed at the herring, which was shoved right under his nose and almost into his mouth.

"Yes, the herring is not too good," and turning to Garkushev he said: "Forbid its distribution." "Yes Sir."

"As to the work . . . We will provide you with two months of training. During this time the usual norms will not be required of you. Newspapers, the public bath, and bread—all these will be provided."

"Give us a guarantee!" demanded Ivanov.

"A man must be trusted" smiled the lieutenant-colonel.

"A man, of course . . . But you, forgive me, are a jailer," said Nikolay without losing his cool.

"Aren't you ashamed Ivanov?"

"But it isn't me who's the chief of the secret service department", the prisoner cut him short. And immediately, without letting the lieutenant-colonel get over the shock, he said:

"What about the food-stuffs in the camp store?"

"We ourselves eat almost the same stuff that you have in your store", the chief of the secret service blurted out the truth without thinking.

"It's indeed too bad that after fifty-two years of Soviet rule you still eat so badly . . ."

General laughter.

Losing control of himself, the lieutenant-colonel blurted: "Come on now . . . let's see if it will be any better when you'll be in charge!"

"To do that, we would have to change places right now," clinched off Nikolay Viktorovich.

Victory was complete.

The lieutenant-colonel and his retinue fled in the real sense of the word.

This was not only a prisoner's victory over a highly placed MVD functionary. This was the victory of one system of thinking over another. This was the victory of freedom over eternal bondage. The personification of freedom was Nikolay Viktorovich Ivanov, and the personification of bondage was the chief of the secret police, by the chains of Soviet bureaucracy.

Shaking Ivanov's hand, I asked permission to see the documents in the investigation and trial of the Social-Christians. Nikolay Viktorovich very kindly made it possible for me to do so. I read without stopping, rereading certain pages several times over.

No wonder that the lawyers who defended Ogurtsov, Sado and Vagin were suspected by the Cheka [secret police] of being favorable to the prisoners. Igor Vyacheslavovich Ogurtsov, about whom I had already heard many a flattering statement in the eleventh zone, had risen in my eyes to a gigantic figure after I had gone through the papers. Intelligent, well educated, pure in thought and

heart and body (he was still chaste, at thirty-five), Ogurtsov rose like an eagle, even from the pages of the trial's transcript and I already saw his wings spread over Russia. Even Terekhov, the deputy procurator-general, and a representative of the Central Committee came to pay homage to this prisoner. They wanted to persuade him to renounce his convictions. When they encountered refusal, they tried to frighten him with death by shooting. To Russia's great honor, he did not tremble, but filled the cells of the Vladimirskaia prison with the white nights of St. Petersburg.

I embrace you my dear compatriots. I kiss the earth upon which you walk, Evgeniya Mikhaylovna and Vyacheslav Vasil'yevich—mother and father of Ogurtsov!

Our Igor, your "Gorik", will soon return to the city on the Neva. He will return to you, his parents. To have a son like that is happiness which can't be compared to any other.

I had the same good impression of Mikhail Yukhanovich Sado, Ogurtsov's first assistant within the organization. Like Igor' Vyacheslavovich, he behaved honorably both at the investigation and the trial. I had seen this man for only one hour. He came to zone eleven from Vladimir towards the end of April but was immediately transferred to zone three, and then to zone seventeen, then again back to zone three, either to "work" or for hospitalization.

The Chekists were obviously afraid to keep him too long in one place—so great was the attractive force of this Assyrian. Yes, indeed, an Assyrian who had accepted Russia with his entire being, who had gone forth to fight for her in the very front ranks and under the most dangerous conditions.

In his last year at the university Mikhail Yukhanovich was asked to the Leningrad office of the KGB.

"Your knowledge of Arabic is excellent," began the captain, "would you be so kind as to translate a short text into Russian . . ."

Sado translated the text. He was then asked to work for the KGB.

"Since you also know Hebrew very well, we will send you to Israel. You will have a brilliant career, Mikhail Yukhanovich. The only thing you'll be missing is bird's milk."

"I prefer the milk of truth. The milk of Christian teaching."

Blok [a Russian poet—Translator's note] once said: A poet has no career. He has only a fate. Learned men, truly learned men like Sado also have no careers. Such people are profoundly knowledgeable and have a clear conscience. Where are you Mikhail Yukhanovich? I would so love to see you!

"Everyone to work!" commanded Garkushev, lining up the armless and legless. "Those who don't go will be deprived of their store privileges, visiting rights, packages—everything!"

"Corpse-eaters! Savages!" came from all sides.

Nevertheless a few still went or rather crawled, because these aged men—between sixty and ninety—already could not walk.

Solomon Borisovich Dol'nik did not go.

"Why aren't you at work?" asked Garkushev the next morning.

"I'm an invalid. I won't go."

"I'll deprive you of your store privileges."

The next day the same question.

"I won't go," repeated Dol'nik.

On the third day again.

"I won't go."

"I deprive you of the right of a visit from your wife."

"I simply won't go."

"And I will deprive you . . ."

Once again the prisoner won. Garkushev did not deprive Dol'nik of anything—he was afraid. But the camp boiled and churned more and more.

New prisoners were arriving. Two engineers from Rovno, and a seventy-year-old Ukrainian priest—a uniat. And finally, Yuriy Ivanovich Fedorov, the former MVD captain who had worked as senior investigator in Leningrad.

All of us had already heard about this interesting affair, but of course we all wanted to know the details. All the more, because Yuriy Ivanovich—tall, with a kind, open face—charmed us. That same evening we invited him to coffee, the next day too, and on the third day again. We no longer drank coffee without him.

We found out the following: opposition had arisen in Leningrad to the Soviet regime among the hierarchy of the Ministry of Internal Affairs and Security [MVD]. All of them practicing communists, who nevertheless saw in the party's

present policy a distortion of Lenin's teachings, and who therefore felt that Brezhnev and Kosygin should be removed and a two-party system, for which Lenin presumably fought, should be established, and freedom be given to the people.

Neither I, nor Ivanov, could of course in the least share Fedorov's point of view, but we had the utmost respect for Yuriy Ivanovich's courage to engage in the struggle.

On one occasion, during a recess in work, Yuriy Ivanovich gathered several of us in a group and said:

"Today the zone is going on a hunger strike. I know with certainty of three of the participants: Galanskov, Ginzburg, and Borodin. We must lend them our support."

"What's the reason for the hunger strike?" asked Ivanov.

"We should of course know the reason," seconded Bochevarov. "We should know the exact reason."

"I'm afraid there's not much of a chance for this. But each day counts in a hunger strike. I propose that we write a petition stating our demands. For the time being we won't declare a hunger strike. But we will give them to understand that if our demands are not met, we will go on a hunger strike."

On the first of December we dropped our petition into the mail-box, and on the second, the man in charge of distributing the work came to the factory immediately after lunch.

"Petrov, Bochevarov, Konosov, Fedorov, Dragosh, Dol'nik, Sokol'skiy, Ivanov, Khachatryan, Merkushev—get ready for departure.

In the residential zone we noticed Major Postnikov, the head of the KGB, with an unknown captain, also a "cavalryman".

"Some trick! Where are they taking us to?" we asked each other.

"Take all your things. Even those you have outside the zone . . ." came the order.

"Well, what do you know!"

We of course understood that the Chekists had decided to forestall the hunger strike, particularly because of the approaching anniversary of the Soviet constitution. Furthermore, the continuous unrest in our zone frightened them, at least worried them considerably. They selected nine prisoners who from their point of view were the most fervently convinced and important.

"We'll be scattered throughout the various camps," said Ivanov.

"Most likely we'll be sent to Saransk for brain-washing," suggested Fedorov.

"And I think that we'll be all sent to zone three. I believe there's a new factory there," declared Konosov.

Others too made a stab at it. I myself was inclined to think that more than likely it would be Saransk, or the Central Investigation Confinement Center.

. . . They took us to Ivas, to the investigation confinement center where each of us was placed in a cell. I was sent to zone three with Ivanov, Sokol'skiy and Dol'nik; Fedorov, Konosov and Bochevarov were sent to zone nine; Dragosh, Khachatryan, Merkushev to zone five. By the way, I had forgotten to introduce the reader to Merkushev. His first name was Slava. He was young—twenty-five. He was the son of an important MVD official. He rose not so much against his father as against the Soviet regime. He too, of course, wore a beard; he had a delicate face and a strong personality; in camp he was always rebelling and talking to his father's colleagues in a barking manner.

Restricted to our cells, we too, without exception, started barking.

"Who's in charge!" (Boom! Boom!—on the doors).

"Where's the chief of this institution!" (Boom! Boom! Boom!)

"Guard! Come here! (Boom! Boom!)

The guard comes up. The officer of the day and the chief too. Each of us is handed a decree, which we proceed to read:

DECREE

On the basis and so forth, return so-and-so to solitary confinement for indoctrination. *For educational training.*

Signature: chief of the KGB, Chief of departmental operations. Approved by the procurator.

At first our eyes become large like saucers or like the eyes of Hollywood stars. Then there is general laughter; and finally again: boom! boom! boom!!!

The lieutenant-colonel who came the next day and who said he was Deputy Chief of the Administration was asked to leave, since he obviously wasn't able to explain anything at all.

Ershov appeared in the evening: he was congratulated for the star on his epaulettes, called a fascist, and promised that he would get it in the face from everyone in the ward if we were not immediately relieved of the indoctrination (the ward was dirty, there were plank beds instead of cots, and we had been deprived of everything, even pencils and paper).

"You'll have everything. Everything will be explained. Calm down." However they withdrew immediately and did not appear again.

The next day I did not accept any food, declared a hunger strike, and wrote a sharp letter to the secretary of the Mordovskiy regional committee party. Incidentally, I told them that my legs were in poor shape and that I needed medical treatment, not indoctrination in a solitary confinement cell.

Captain Afanas'ev appeared; he too was a "cavalryman". He called each one of us out in turn and explained that this measure was a temporary one and was due to our conflict with the administration.

"Not with the administration, but with the Soviet system," corrected Dragosh. Two surgeons were asked to see me.

"Yes, you really should be hospitalized. Why don't you stop the hunger strike", suggested doctor Petrishevskiy, a major by rank.

"I won't stop it until you get me out of solitary confinement."

"This is up to the KGB," said the doctor, shrugging his shoulders.

"If the doctors prescribe it, we'll send you!" said Afanas'ev.

The coming Friday (in Mordovia the train for political prisoners runs between camps only on Fridays) we were taken to our various destinations. Dol'nik and I were taken to the hospital. He had some sort of heart trouble. Nikolay Fedorovich Dragosh and Slava were sent to zone nineteen, Sokol'skiy to zone seventeen, the lesser zone where Galanskov and Ginzburg were also kept. The Petersburgers were returned to their old place. Only Yuriy Ivanovich disappeared God knows where. We came to the conclusion that he was taken to Saransk. We decided that the Mordovian Chekists wanted to have a look at their former colleague from Lenin-grad and a chance to hear him speak.

More than a pleasant surprise awaited me at the hospital. While my belongings were being carefully scrutinized, Solomon Borisovich told me when we were in the waiting room which resembled a police precinct:

"Galanskov and Sado are here!"

"Really?" I was surprised.

"I already spoke to Sado. He works as a stoker in the kitchen. Galanskov is in the recovery ward. He has ulcers."

"And you, Solomon Borisovich, have an excellent sense of smell", I said jokingly.

No sooner had I entered the building (I was sent to the first, the surgical), when Mikhail Yukhanovich bounced in. We embraced and kissed. They say that everything in a person begins with the eyes. If the eyes are luminous, the person is luminous. If the eyes are clouded, the person is clouded. Mikhail Yukhanovich's eyes shone. Deep and dark, wisdom and sorrow was in their depth, and light from the soul and love shone on the surface. His face mat in color, his lips—full (a sign of a generous nature) and he wore a thick, black beard in a halfmoon.

"You don't know Yuriy Evgen'evich Ivanov! Ah! He is a painter of genius! I will tell you about him later. They took him to Saransk. Yura (that is Galanskov, who incidentally sends you his best regards) was sent here. They brought me too here. . . . It was very good that you supported us. It's only a pity that they sent back all our Petersburgers. Tell me please, in brief for the time being, how are Kolya, Mikhail Borisovich, Bochevarov?"

You could tell by the way in which Mikhail Yukhanovich pronounced the names of his colleagues that he felt closest to Nikolay Viktorovich Ivanov, but also he wanted to know everything about all the others.

"Yuriy Timofeyevich Galanskov and Vania Cherdyntsev will drop by. Cherdyntsev is a friend of Dragosh and a nice fellow. Like yourself, he is recently from Vladimir. As to Daniel, he was recently sent to Vladimir. Did you know that?"

Yes, I already knew this.

I liked Yuriy Timofeyevich immediately. He at the same time resembled both Dostoyevskiy and Belinskiy. He wore the democratic beard of the narodniks of the sixties of the last century; he was thin, walked slowly, did everything unhurriedly, and wasn't too ready with words for he spoke little. It was difficult to see his eyes: the glasses on his straight nose were in the way. Eyeglasses always hide the eyes, or somehow disguise them.

From a three-hour conversation at coffee, I understood that Galanskov and Sado were entirely different people, but were both honest, courageous, and could not dissociate their own personal happiness from that of their country's. But each understood happiness in his own way. I will say it again: there are as many roads [in life] as eyes.

Sado's erudition and high intellect were immediately apparent. Despite all his Russianness (Mikhail Yukhanovich grew up and was educated in Russia) he was a southerner. Looking at him, listening to him, I was involuntarily transposed in my imagination into the Assyria of the first centuries of Christianity, that Christianity of powerful unbending meekness which in pagan Rome [made its adherents?] walk into the lion's jaws, blessing the insanely aroused amphitheater.

Yes, Sado was a personality, a personality but not an organization.

Yes, Ogurtsov was apparently an even greater personality. But also a personality and not an organization.

On several occasions I saw tears in Mikhail Yukhanovich's eyes when I told him that many in their group were still not really ready for anything . . .

Sado wept with his entire being, and tried to counter me with argument, but I saw that his arguments held no water. And deep down in his own soul Mikhail Yukhanovich must have known this. He could not but know.

Galanskov was less emotional. Despite all his tenderness and kindness one sensed his rationalism. He did everything like he walked, slowly and surely. And he undermined Soviet power systematically and with persistence: articles and letters flowed from his pen. And he certainly knew how to write. I became convinced of this after reading his letter to the Procurator General about the position of political prisoners in Mordovia.

"In your account don't forget to write that Igor Vyacheslavovich is seriously ill. Attention should be drawn to him, the public should be taught that people like Ogurtsov must be treasured. This is the possession of the entire nation, not of an individual system."

"Just look—what an artist Ivanov is!" said Sado to me, when he brought me, shortly after we met, two of Yuriy Evgeniyevich's works.

The paintings were really magnificent: one, a portrait of Sado, another, entitled "Rus" [the ancient and poetic name for Russia—Translator's note], painted by a prisoner sentenced five times and now into his second decade behind a barbed wire fence.

"He has dozens of works! He is a giant! A titan! Do you understand?" Mikhail Yukhanovich continued convincing me.

To me his words meant:

"Here she is—Russia. This is our holy Russia, the Russia of Dostoyevskiy and Bunin. Of the archpriest Avvakum, and of Kutuzov. The Russia of Ogurtsov and Yuriy Evgen'yevich Ivanov."

In this respect Sado and Galanskov were of a like mind; they agreed because both of them were zealously devoted to Russia, as was Vagin, and the two Ivanovs, Platonov, and Borodin whom I never did get to meet; and Dragosh and his associate Ivan Cherdyntsev, a really wonderful man, who never pushed ahead of you but who was always ready to help a friend or any person in need.

I bow to you, Aleksandr Ginzburg. Until now, fate had not brought us together. But I always hear the beat of your heart. And I cannot think of Russia's tomorrow without you either, Andrey Donatovich Sinyavskiy. I believe that Konosov will write some beautiful verse. And Yuriy Ivanov Fedorov, having cleansed himself of materialism as of barnacles, will contribute towards the rebirth of a new Russia.

I believe in the Russian people.

THE TRIAL OF IRINA BELOGORODSKAYA

[Translated from Posev, March 1969, p. 2]

Moscow.

On 19 February, the case of engineer Irina Belogorodskaya was being heard in the people's court in the Bauman section of Moscow (28 Chernyshevskiy St.). Preliminary information on this case was given in the last issue of "Posev" (article entitled "New Trials are Expected").

Belogorodskaya was accused of "manufacturing and spreading fabrications and slander against the Soviet state and social order." The accusation was based on copies of an open letter found in Belogorodskaya's home, addressed to Soviet

citizens, appealing to them to rise to the defense of Anatoliy Marchenko, who was arrested July 29 of last year; Marchenko is the author of the book "My Evidence," which describes conditions in Soviet concentration camps. This appeal was signed by Larisa Daniel, Pavel Litvinov, General Grigorenko, Pyotr Yakir, Anatoliy Yakobson, and Lyudmila Alekseyeva.

Irina Belogorodskaya was sentenced to one year in a concentration camp under article 190/1 and 15 of the Ukrainian RSFSR. Article 15 covers "responsibility for preparing a crime and for attempting a crime." Belogorodskaya did not admit her guilt, and defended her right both during the preliminary investigation and at the trial to come to the aid of an arrested person who was in trouble.

The judge at the trial was Monakhov, and the procurator, Biriukov. The defending attorney was Boris Romm; this attorney was approved by the investigating judge, and appointed against Belogorodskaya's wish.

The trial was not open to the public and was conducted for all practical purposes in camera. Friends of the accused and community representatives were not allowed at the trial. They congregated in front of the court building. There were about 150 people; among them were A. Yesenin-Volpin, P. Grigorenko, P. Yakir and others. When the accused was brought to the court a bouquet of flowers was thrown from the crowd.

Irina Belogorodskaya's case produced a new wave of indignation in the community. The outrageous highhandedness with which the case conducted was pointed out. The accusation was described as a blatant disregard of the law and the rights of citizens. The letter in Marchenko's defense contained no slander against the Soviet state. It stated the truth. During the entire investigation this letter was never described as anti-Soviet. None of the authors of the letter were called in to testify as witnesses, either during the investigation or the trial. Thus, Irina Belogorodskaya was tried for a letter, which was declared as "slandering the Soviet order" without any proof, and only at the trial.

Following Irina Belogorodskaya's arrest, the authors of the letter appealed many times to various offices, pointing to the fact that it was they and not Irina Belogorodskaya who was responsible for the letter. Recently they again presented a statement to the procurator and intend to continue their protests against the arbitrary sentence and the description of the letter as an anti-Soviet document addressed to Soviet citizens. In Moscow it is feared that the authors of the letter—General P. Grigorenko, P. Yakir, L. Alekseyeva, A. Yakobson—will now be subjected to repressions and arrest.

Foreign newspapermen in Moscow state that Irina Belogorodskaya is 29 years old. She is the fiancée of Anatoliy Marchenko and a step-sister of Larisa Daniel. She was denounced by a taxi-driver in whose car she left her purse, containing 60 copies of a petition in defense of Marchenko who was arrested on July 29 for addressing a letter to the Czechoslovak newspapers, criticizing the Soviet position on the democratisation of Czechoslovakia. On August 21, the day that Soviet troops began their intervention, Marchenko was sentenced to one year of hard labor.

Irina Belogorodskaya was again arrested on 5 Jan 1973 [Sentence penciled in—Translator's Note]

The trial of Il'ya Burmistrovich, also scheduled for February 19 (see the above indicated communication in the last issue of "Posev"), did not take place. It was presumably postponed on account of the judge's illness.

Il'ya Burmistrovich has been under guard since 16 May 1968. He was arrested for distributing the works of Sinyavskiy and Daniel (according to some sources, and in general for working for "samizdat"). He is about 30 years old; he is a candidate of physical-mathematical sciences.

Burmistrovich behaves very courageously and steadfastly at the investigation. He denies distributing literature not approved by the government, but categorically refuses to regard what he did as criminal, in as much every citizen has the right to express and proclaim his views, as stated by the Human Rights Declaration.

Burmistrovich refuses to name the people from whom he received Sinyavskiy's and Daniel's works, or the names of those to whom he had passed them on. It is expected that because of his courageous stand, Burmistrovich will receive a more severe sentence: that is, three years.

Information has been received from certain circles of the Moscow intelligencia on Larisa Daniel, Pavel Litvinov, and Konstantin Babitskiy.

Larisa Daniel is working at a wood-processing factory in the region of Bratsk, 808 kilometers from Irkutsk. Her address is: Irkutskaya oblast, Chuna Station, General Delivery.

Pavel Litvinov works as a machinist. His address is: Chitinskaya [Chita] oblast, poselok [village] Verkhne-Usuglin, General Delivery (the village is not mentioned in the list of populated places within the USSR: apparently it's a small village or settlement, perhaps newly established). P. Litvinov lives in a barrack; his wife has left to join him.

Konstantin Babitskiy works as a joiner, not far from the town of Syktyvkar, Komi ASSR. His oldest daughter has gone to join him.

FROM THE DIARY OF EDUARD KUZNETSOV SENTENCED TO DEATH AT THE FIRST Leningrad TRIALS

[From Tribuna (Israeli Russian language daily), 29 Dec. 1972]

This terrible human testament was written by one sentenced to death at the Leningrad trial of December 1970 for an attempt to hijack a plane to escape from the Soviet Union. The death sentence was commuted to 15 years of imprisonment. Prior to this, from 1961 to 1968, Kuznetsov served in a forced labor camp for having edited and distributed an underground political magazine. Excerpts from Kuznetsov's diary were miraculously brought to the West and published in the French weekly "L'Espresso", at risk to himself but with his full consent.

BEGINNING OF THE DIARY

The investigation ended on 27 Oct 1970. All the documents had been signed and I was left with only a pencil and some paper. Usually the prison guards look for every scrap of paper and every written word. I can't say that I had thought or wondered much; I derived my satisfaction from concentrating, smoking to my heart's content, and writing down all sorts of irrelevant things.

28 Oct: I refused the services of a lawyer. I know, and not only from my own personal experience, that in political trials the defense has no significance. I know that I won't be allowed to say everything I want, so it is best to say nothing at all. Each time I was sure I had led the procurator and the prosecuting attorney into a corner, I noticed that they were very pleased. They knew that they had my fate in their hands. Any attempt to force them to think logically was bound to fail in advance.

CONTACT WITH THE OUTSIDE WORLD

I assume that this trial too will be a parody of "socialist law" in its pseudo-legal proceedings. I did not commit any crimes against the USSR. Therefore I do not want to play their game before the judges. I am no longer twenty, and I cannot change the existing ways. (Despite this Kuznetsov's friends insisted on obtaining a lawyer for him.) The lawyer hired by my friends is no fool. We both came to the conclusion that my case was all but decided. In any case I will be sentenced to no less than 15 years in prison. Therefore it makes no difference whether I do or don't admit my guilt under no matter what paragraph of the indictment. Still, I am pleased that my lawyer provides me with some contact with the outside world. He is the only normal being in this world of bureaucratic despotism.

30 Oct: We were transferred from cell 347 to cell 242. Just above us is cell no. 193 where Lenin once sat. Now it is empty. It is something like a historic shrine which must not be profaned. At the beginning of the Revolution everyone used to shout in unison: let's destroy the churches and prisons. The churches have been destroyed with considerable success, but the number of prisons has increased.

11 Nov: Almost my entire life had been spent in communal quarters, barracks, and forced labor camps. How long can people live like rotten herring and dream of a private room as of a utopia? I would exchange 15 years in prison for 20 years in solitary confinement without any regret. According to Sinyavskiy, a forced labor camp is a cross between communal housing, a mental hospital, and a kindergarten. This is the prisoner's point of view. Of course there is also the administration's point of view. A labor camp is the closed shore of the Soviet empire. People may waltz around there completely naked without experiencing any shame.

FREE EDUCATION

Captain Kruglov once told me that if it were up to him, he would chase all the Jews out of the Soviet Union. In his opinion, Jews don't want to serve the Soviet government loyally. This point of view is very prevalent among party members, government officials and bureaucrats. This does not mean that those imprisoned are more anti-Semitic than those on the outside.

14 Nov: We were told that the standard of living in the United States had dropped, and that the situation there with respect to education is critical. Thank goodness education in the USSR is free. This is one of the reasons for forbidding emigration from the USSR. True enough, just think: the state had spent money educating you, and you want to give your knowledge to the enemies of the Soviet Union! Why should a master refuse to provide free education to his slave who can't leave him?

The sweat of an educated slave is sweeter. Economically, it is more advantageous. In the Soviet Union free education opens the doors of the universities to untalented though respectable people. They know that five years spent among students will assure them a living until the end of their days, without much effort on their part. Generally speaking the Soviet Union is a paradise for parasites. Where else in the world can a person continue to receive a salary without doing anything?

NO EXPLANATIONS OR ALIBIS

20 Nov: Since early morning I had been preparing for the trial. I had not eaten or drunk, and was on needles and pins. One, then two, then three hours had gone by. Finally, towards evening, I was informed that the trial was postponed until December 15. No explanations or alibis.

29 Nov: I believe that I found out why the trial was postponed. On November 25th the U.N. General Assembly adopted a special resolution against the hijacking of planes. Now they can sentence me to death.

4 Dec: Lenin spoke of bourgeois democracy the way St. Augustine spoke of idolators, whose good qualities are but potentially negative characteristics.

5 Dec: The heroes in Soviet novels have no bad qualities. Sometimes they do suffer from weaknesses, but these are only there to allow the author to show how they may be overcome.

10 Dec: At last I was able to speak to my lawyer. He demands that I restrict my participation in the trial to a minimum. He wants me to speak and behave like a repenting criminal resigned to his fate. I don't like his proposal. It is good to love people and Russia, but from afar. In the West they have no idea of what's happening in the Soviet Union. They don't know that here we seek bread, not butter. After lunch I was visited by Major Vasil'yev of the KGB. He told me (either intentionally or unintentionally) that a noise and din were raised in our favor in the West. I don't believe this will help us, but it will help raise our morale. There is nothing worse than an anonymous death. Vasil'yev asked me whether I intended to wear a skull-cap the way Mendelevich did, passing himself for a religious man. "I have never met a Jew who was religious," said Vasil'yev. "The only thing that they believe in is money!" I answered him with all possible courtesy: "Dear Sir, the ancient Jew lay on a sheep skin looking up into the sky, and thought of God, while people like you hung on branches swinging on their tails."

13 Dec: And so, the trial begins the day after tomorrow. Yesterday, to my own surprise, I suddenly decided to participate in it actively. For two days I wrote without stopping and only now have finished. I haven't yet decided how I will behave in court, but the pages I have written arouse in me a desire to read them out aloud in court. (Following are several passages from the statement which Kuznetsov intended to read at the trial.)

"I have long given up the thought of fighting the existing regime. The political traditions of the Russian people are tied to despotism. Think of Ivan the Terrible and Peter the Great. The Soviet regime is an ideal heir to these two rulers. I have no hope that the regime will become democratic in the near future. To me personally, it is clear why a person with my convictions would want to leave Holy Russia. However, I wonder whether the judges will understand me! I am a Jew, and want to live in Israel, the land of my forefathers. This does not mean that Russia is not my motherland. It is just as much my motherland as Israel. But I must emphasize that the concept of 'motherland' does not take first place in my scale of values. The main thing is—freedom! Israel attracts me, because it is both my motherland and a free country."

15 Dec: The first day of the trial has come to an end. The comedy lasted from 9 a.m. to 7 p.m. I am very tired and can hardly stand on my feet. Today was Dymshits', Iosif Mendelevich's, and Silva's turn. Tomorrow will be mine. Officially this is an open trial, but actually only the defendant's closest relatives are allowed in the courtroom. Iosif and Silva were O.K. They firmly denied all the accusations. The procurator behaved like an ass. On occasion his female assistant would get

him out of difficulties. I was revolted by the procurator's behavior, which prompted my lawyer to say: "He is duty-bound to act the way he does. As to the indictment, he is not under any obligation to delve into it. He is only asked to represent the will of the authorities in court."

16 Dec: I now remember that before going to the Riga airport to fly to Leningrad, Silva asked me: "What will happen to us?" And I answered: "If we are caught and the matter will not be made public, we will be sentenced to death," but when I saw the expression in her eyes I became ashamed of myself and added: "They will not put us to death. If they sentence us to death, it will be only to frighten others. You would be sentenced to about three years of imprisonment."

Silva's answer to this was: "I don't want this. I want to be treated like the rest."

Silva believes that she would help us if she took the whole blame for what we did on herself.

19 Dec: How did all this begin? Towards the end of February Silva introduced me to Butman. (Butman was sentenced to 10 years of hard labor in May 1971 at the second Leningrad trial.) On one occasion we approached a modest memorial marking the place where tens of thousands of Jews had been killed by the Nazis. Butman asked me: "What are the prospects of leaving this place?" I answered: "At present there aren't any, and probably there won't be any within the near future, unless." "Unless what?" asked Butman. "Unless everything they want to hide will blow up. As long as each one of us thinks only of himself, nothing will happen. Try to understand that this is not a problem of the emigration of individual persons, but a problem which concerns us all, the problem of free emigration from the Soviet Union for all those who want to leave. Only thus will we achieve anything; not by writing tearful letters to the Kremlin or the United Nations."

"So what do you suggest?" asked Butman. "A lot of people have lost all their patience after so many years of waiting and so many arbitrary decisions by the authorities in refusing exit permits. I suppose that one fine day a group of people, who have lost all hope, will do something unheard of. No doubt that they will suffer greatly for it. But this will be the first break in the Chinese wall".

"But, still, can this be done at the present time?"

"Thirty to forty people could get together in a group and go on a hunger strike to protest the fact that paragraphs 13 and 15 of the Declaration of Human Rights have become a 'dead letter'."

"I have a friend who is a good pilot. We have no other way out but to organize a group."

"The prospects for success are very small," I answered, "but if this turns out successfully, it will be the first time that personal considerations will contribute to the general welfare of all Soviet Jews."

So here we are now in prison. We made a serious mistake because our evaluation of the police system of our "beloved motherland" was amateurish and childish. In the Soviet Union pressure is applied on a disobedient prisoner in a forced labor camp in two ways: by decreasing the daily rations, and by sentencing the prisoner to solitary confinement. When a prisoner leaves the camp, he is obliged to co-operate with the KGB, otherwise he is threatened with a new term of imprisonment. For example, it is enough for a prisoner to see a young girl twice, but for her to be called in by the KGB, questioned, and given appropriate instructions.

Behind a barbed wire fence a person can say whatever he wants. It is true that he may then be given a maximum of 15 days of solitary confinement, or an additional three years in prison. This is socialist democracy. You are free to say anything you want, but they too are free to do what they want, and can throw you into prison. If you are listed as an opponent of the regime, they won't try to improve your behavior, but will want to destroy your personality. They have no need to transform you into a Marxist-Leninist. You don't have to have any principles. After three months of particularly harsh conditions in a corrective labor camp there are no two opinions on the usual question of whether you prefer a piece of sausage or a woman. Everyone wants the sausage.

22 Dec: Yesterday I found it difficult to write anything in my diary, as the procurator demanded that Dymshits and I be sentenced to death. He also demanded that both Yurity Fedorov and Aleksey Murzhenko, both of them non-Jews, be sentenced, the first to 15 years, and the second to 14 years of imprisonment. He demanded 15 years of imprisonment for Iosif Mendelovich and 10 years for Sil'va-Zalmanson. When I returned to my cell, I asked my cellmate to leave me alone. Finally, I knocked my head against the wall three times. The prisoners in the next cell thought I was signalling them and answered me by knocking against the wall.

3 Dec: The comedy is over. The sentence will be carried out tomorrow at 6 o'clock in the evening. Until then I have a whole evening, an entire night, and the whole next day.

24 Dec: Sil'va's words were the best. She said in Hebrew, immediately translating it into Russian: "If I forget thee, O Jerusalem, let my right hand wither." Dymshits said: "I thank all my companions in misfortune. I had first met most of you at the time of our arrest at the airport. But we did not become spiders in a glass jar, we did not attack each other. This will come about in the middle of February 1971, and of course will not be a happy time."

5 May 1971: I begin at zero point.

We were searched on April 30th, on the eve of a holiday. As a result, I lost all my papers. One of the guards discovered the place where I had hid my notes. I jumped on him as though stung by a scorpion and grabbed the notes. I began tearing up the papers and threw them into either the Neva, the Fontanka, the Moyka, or some such other canal. Two guards manhandled me energetically. And now, one week after the incident, my face, hands, and neck are covered with bruises. Thus I destroyed my notes of four months. Only the fate of my very first notebooks, those for November and December, remains unknown to me. When I was transferred to death row, all my notes were wrapped in paper and I was told that they would be kept with my personal belongings.

(On May 10 Kuznetsov returns to his diary, going back to 31 Dec 1971.)

The door suddenly opened. Several prison guards walked in. One of them ordered: "Kuznetsov, put your hands behind your back and follow me." Then he said to the second guard: "Take his things." I put a pack of cigarettes in my pocket and went to the entrance. For a moment the whole thing seemed like a nightmare. New Year's eve—and here I am up against the wall with the guard's hands at my throat. The look in his eye is savage. I don't remember my heart beating, or what I was thinking of then. The third floor. The second floor. If we are going to continue descending like this. . . . But we stopped at the first floor and headed for Captain Kruglov's office. He got up and solemnly announced: "A humanitarian decision was made in your favor. The death sentence was commuted to 15 years of imprisonment in a special regime camp. My congratulations. I wish you a happy new year. What's so funny?"

He thought I was laughing. With great effort I refrained from humiliating tears; I was filled with scorn for the comedy played by the KGB.

"You're displeased?" asked the captain with an ironic smile. "If anyone asks me 20 years from now whether Kuznetsov had changed for the better, I wouldn't believe it." "You are quite right", I answered. [In Russian, a play on words having the following two meanings: 1) that Kuznetsov himself had changed for the better; 2) that Kuznetsov's life had changed for the better—Translator's Note]

18 June 1971: In 1963, on the day of my arrival at the special regime camp, I was called in to Major Garushkin to learn from him that here the enemies of the Soviet state, whose annihilation is demanded by the masses, are detested.

He also told me that those who in other camps were sentenced for disobedience to 15 days of solitary confinement, in this camp were physically destroyed. It should be noted that death sentences under paragraph 77(1) were quite common. In 1963 alone, nine prisoners were committed to death because they had tattooed parts of their bodies. They had tattooed the words "Soviet Communist Party slave", "Bread and Freedom", "Down with Brezhnev and Kosygin", "Down with Soviet Buchenwald" on their foreheads and cheeks.

One prisoner received 10 additional years for helping to make these tattoos.

21 June: I frequently witnessed the most terrible self-inflicted mutilations. Prisoners swallowed nails, metal wire, thermometers and other objects. They chopped off scrotums, swallowed hooks attached to doorknobs by wire so that when the door was pulled the entrails were dragged out; they sewed up their mouths and eyes, cut out pieces of flesh from their bellies and ate it; opened up their arteries, collected the blood into a plate, threw in pieces of bread and ate it up. They cut off fingers, noses, ears and even sex organs. It is simply difficult to describe all this.

31 July: It is getting more and more difficult for me to write anything. I am very tired.

24 Sept: For three days now I have had terrible pains in the stomach. Terrible pains and vomiting. Could it be that these are symptoms of stomach ulcers?

Major Tabakov, a paramedic, examined me and said: "You don't have any pains." "But what about the vomiting?" "You haven't been vomiting either," he answered.

27 Sept: The situation here is very bad. There are no laboratories, x-ray equipment, or doctors. People suffer excruciating pains for months before being sent to the hospital.

A CITIZEN OF ISRAEL

Today Yuriy, Aleksey and I sent out letters repudiating our Soviet citizenship. Following is the text of my letter:

"To the President of the Supreme Soviet of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics—from prisoner Kuznetsov. For several years now I am no longer a citizen of the Soviet Union. Neither in accordance with my conscience nor my political convictions.

In 1968, I completed seven years of imprisonment, after being indicted for anti-Soviet activity. I had tried to realize through legitimate means the elementary right of a person to emigrate. When unsurmountable difficulties were placed in my way, I was obliged to use illegal means to get out of the country, specifically by hijacking an airplane.

At the trial in Leningrad this was unfairly described as treason. I was sentenced to death three times. But the Court of Appeals commuted this to 15 years of imprisonment in a strict regime camp. I consider myself a citizen of Israel. Not only because of my philosophy of life and my [national] origin, but de facto. Therefore I formally request that you annul my Soviet citizenship, as in fact I no longer am a citizen of the USSR. As of today and from now on I am not a Soviet citizen and request that I no longer be considered a citizen of this country."

In three days all of us will go on a hunger strike, begun by Aleksey. We must win, otherwise we are lost.

At present Kuznetsov is in comp No. 10, a strict regime camp. For two years now he has not been allowed any visits from his wife, Sil'va Zalmanson. However, even behind barbed wire, he and his companions had triumphed over their tormentors. The thousands of Soviet Jews who came out to Israel in 1972 are witness thereof.

Tribuna, 29 Dec 1972, p. 2, cols. 1-8 (Israeli Russian language daily).

PERSECUTION OF THE CHRISTIANS

[From "Uncensored Russia," Peter Reddaway, American Heritage Press, New York, 1972]

THE CHURCHES

In my fifty years, firm and clear convictions have formed in me; these are what I express in my articles. I write there the truth. You yourselves do not say that there is any untruth in them. I protest against the barbaric persecution of religion, which expresses itself in the destruction of churches and the humiliation of believers. I protest against a situation in which the Church has been reduced to scum, and comrade Trushin, who is present, is the dictator of the Moscow Church. He, an unbeliever and a communist, appoints and removes priests at whim. (The cause of this naturally lies not in him but in the existing system.) All this infringes every norm and even our Stalinist Constitution. Against all this I protest in my articles, which I have circulated, am circulating and will circulate, exercising my right to freedom of expression.

Anatoly Levitin, at a meeting with prominent atheists, May 1965

All three Soviet constitutions to date proclaim as a cardinal principle the strict separation of Church and State. On the other hand, the Bolshevik ideology, the fanatical intolerance of Lenin personally towards religion, and the close association of the Orthodox Church with the ancien régime all combined to make a live-and-let-live relationship impossible in practice. Almost immediately laws began to be passed undermining the separation principle, until, with the legislation of 1929, close state control of religious bodies was fully legalized in respect to everything except the supreme law, the Constitution.

Apart from the developments on paper, religious groups often suffered much worse depredations 'in the field'. The fact that these started under Lenin, and were not just another aspect of the Stalinist terror, has interested the Chronicle. Here is how it commented on the appearance in samizdat of 'A Letter to the Members of the Politbureau':

This letter, dated March 19th, 1922, is signed by Lenin and demands that the most merciless measures be taken to crush all opposition to the proposed confiscation of church treasures. The instructions contained in the letter do not

conform to the principles of socialist legality. They are the product only of the political and tactical requirements of the moment: 'We must appropriate at all costs this source of several millions—or perhaps even milliards—of gold roubles'; 'suppress their (the clergy's) resistance so brutally that they will remember it for decades to come'; send a member of the All-Union Central Executive Committee of the Soviets (V.Ts.I.K.) to the town of Shuya [NE. of Moscow, where clashes had occurred], with 'verbal instructions' to arrest no less than several dozen representatives of the clergy, the middle classes and the bourgeoisie 'on suspicion of direct or indirect participation in violent resistance to the V.Ts.I.K. decree concerning the confiscation of church treasures'; 'on the basis of his report, the Politbureau will issue a detailed directive, also verbal to the judicial authorities, so that a trial of the rebels of Shuya for resisting the campaign to help the starving can be held as quickly as possible and can end, unfailingly, with the execution of a very large number of the most influential and dangerous Black Hundreders, of Shuya, and if possible not only of Shuya, but of Moscow also, and several other ecclesiastical centres'; 'the more representatives of the reactionary bourgeoisie and the reactionary clergy we manage to execute on this suspicion, the better'. The famine appears consistently throughout the letter as providing a convenient set of circumstances in which the confiscation of church treasures can be carried out without fear of resistance from the peasantry. The millions or milliards of roubles are required not for famine relief, which admittedly might have justified repressions; they are necessary so that the Soviet team may feel itself a power at the Genoa conference [on European economic reconstruction of April-May 1922].

The letter is a top-secret document, and the channel through which it passed into *samizdat* is unlikely to be discovered. Therefore one should not regard the document as indisputably genuine: it would be wise to carry out a detailed textual analysis of the letter. Obviously official propaganda will not miss its opportunity to declare such a document a forgery. But in *samizdat*, where there is complete freedom of research, one should not rush to the opposite extreme: if the authenticity of the document is confirmed, then the profile of the first Chairman of the Council of People's Commissars will become more clear-cut in the mind of the public.

No. 15 duly reported that the letter's authenticity was confirmed by the appearance of a brief summary of it in Volume 45 of Lenin's Complete Works. Further confirmation lies in the fact that recorded events fit closely with the letter; a crowd at Shuya had been machine-gunned in clashes on March 15th, Izvestia recording four people killed, and forty-five priests and laymen later stood trial, twelve of whom were executed.

In the 1930s Stalin turned to the forcible closure of places of worship on a massive scale, with the aim of eradicating public religion completely. The war, however, prevented him completing his task; in order to gain believers' support he had to reopen the churches. After this, the next big onslaught did not follow until 1958-64, under Khrushchev, when at least half the religious buildings in the U.S.S.R. were closed by deception or force. The number of open Orthodox churches, for example, fell in this period from about 20,000 to some 10,000. Since 1964 the situation has remained fairly static, but occasionally the Chronicle has carried reports like this;

In the town of Kolyvan near Novosibirsk [in south-central Siberia] the Orthodox church has been closed on the pretext of its not conforming with fire safety regulations. When the believers dug a pond to conform with the fire regulations, the local authorities filled it in again and prohibited church services, despite the fact that permission to hold services had been given by Moscow. Moreover the local authorities tore down the church's cupolas, killing a five-year-old child in the process. Instead of the church the believers have been given a small chapel which does not satisfy fire safety regulations.

THE ORTHODOX

Anatoly Levitin

No one in the Christian wing of the Democratic Movement has been more prominent than the colourful Anatoly Levitin (pen-name Krasnov—see page 279), on whom much documentation is already available. After the police came for him on September 12th, 1969, the Chronicle drew on his extensive autobiographical and other writings to compile this item:

Levitin spent seven years—1949-56—in Stalin's camps. He was later rehabilitated. Levitin's deep religious convictions, and his activities as an Orthodox writer, led [in 1958] to this talented teacher and literary scholar being deprived of the right to teach in schools.

A. Krasnov is the author of a number of articles in the *Journal of the Moscow Patriarchate*. Apart from this, he is the author of a three-volume history of the Living Church.

Since 1959 Krasnov-Levitin has written a large number of works, in which he has spoken out in particular against violations of religious freedom in the Soviet Union: *Struggling for Light and Truth*, *The Brassy Clatter*, *The Fiery Chalice*, *The Drawn Bow-string*, *On Monasticism*, *The Free Church*, and others. In recent years he has written two important philosophical works: *Stromati* and *Christ and the Master*, on which the *Chronicle* reported in No. 5. The journal *Science and Religion* has twice written about Levitin-Krasnov (see Vasilev's article 'The Theologian-Inciter', 1966, No. 10, and the section 'A Contemporary "Secular Theologian"', in N. Semenkin's article 'From Anathema to Vocation', 1969, No. 8).

Here we interrupt No. 10 so as to give No. 5's account of the samizdat works just mentioned, and also of two others:

Christ and the Master is an attempt to discuss several basic questions of Christian teaching through a literary and philosophical study of [Mikhail] Bulgakov's novel *The Master and Margarita*. The thread of the argument is provided by the chapters in the novel about Christ. The book is written in a free, discursive manner with frequent digressions into the author's personal reminiscences and reflections.

The Greek word *stromati* literally means "carpet", but in the figurative sense of "miscellany" it was used by various ancient teachers of the Church as the title for their books. Written in the form of observations loosely tied together by the general theme of the part a Christian should play in society, Krasnov's book deals with such questions as the moral responsibility of a Christian to society, the role of the Church in the life of society, and the collaboration of Christians with people of different views in the solution of common moral and political tasks. The author gives a brief survey of the various political trends at the present time and states his attitude towards them. At the end of the book the author gives his political credo, which he defines as "democratic humanism", and calls on people of different persuasions to unite on this basis.

His letter on "The situation of the Russian Orthodox Church" is addressed to the Pope, and it gives an account, based mainly on the author's personal observations, of the attitude of different generations of Russians to religion and the Church, the way in which some young people are turning to the Church, and the relations between different faiths. He raises the need for an inner revival of the Russian Orthodox Church, and examines the difficulties in the way of this. The author speaks of the criticism which he and others have made of the Russian bishops, and contends that such criticism is both justified and necessary. The question of uniting the Western and Eastern Churches is also touched upon in this letter.

The article "A Drop under the Microscope" is about the difficulties which have arisen at the parish level in the Russian Orthodox Church as a result of a change in the parish administration. This change consisted of taking the administration of parish affairs out of the hands of the priest and transferring it to the council of twenty laymen headed by a church elder. The author shows that this reform is in conflict with canonical tradition, and he points out the practical consequences which it entails in conditions of constant interference by the authorities in the life of the church: infringement of the rights of the priest, unchecked power for the elder, who is appointed by the state authorities, etc. As an illustration, the example of the Kikolo-Kuznetskaya church [in Moscow] is described in detail. The author also treats the more general question of the way in which the Russian Orthodox Church has been denied its rights in the Soviet Union, and of the responsibility of the Church hierarchy itself for this state of affairs.

Now No. 10 continues:

During recent years Levitin-Krasnov has also spoken out continually in defence of civil rights, and in defence of people arrested and sentenced on political charges. His signature stands at the foot of numerous collective protests, including the letter to the Budapest meeting [see pp. 86-8]. He is a member of the Action Group for the Defence of Human Rights in the Soviet Union. As a publicist he has commented on the arrest [see p. 327] of B. V. Talantov (*Drama in Vyatka*) and [see p. 136] of P. G. Grigorenko (*Light in the Little Window*).

On September 12th, the Procuracy investigator L. S. Akimova carried out a search in Levitin's flat. During the search, the following works of A. E. Levitin-

Krasnov were confiscated: *A History of the Living Church, On Monasticism, Stromati*, a letter to the Pope, a letter to the Patriarch in support of the letter from [Moscow] priests Gleb Yakunin and Nikolai Eshliman, *Light in the Little Window, Drama in Vyalka, Listening to the Radio, The Brassy Clatter*, and others. Also confiscated were *samizdat* materials and a typewriter.

Just before the search of Levitin's flat, his friends Oleg Vorobyov and Vadim Shavrov had been there. The search began as soon as they had left the house, while they themselves were quickly detained by the police on suspicion of 'stealing suitcases'. Shavrov was released from the police station after the search was over and Levitin-Krasnov had been taken away. Vorobyov was searched at the police station, without a warrant for the search of his person being issued, and the letter 'To the Members of the Politbureau' by V. I. Lenin (about the events in Shuya) was taken from him. He was then sent to the violent patients' section of psychiatric hospital No. 15, from which he was not released until October 20th. Oleg Vorobyov [see plate 63] was among those who signed their names in support of the Action Group's [first] appeal to the United Nations [and later received a six-year sentence in Perm].

For three days A. E. Levitin was held in a preventive detention cell at the police station, and then he was transferred to Butyrka prison. An investigation was begun by the Moscow city Procuracy. (The investigator was Akimova, already well known as chief investigator of the cases of the Pushkin Square demonstration of January 22nd, 1967, of the Red Square demonstration of August 25th, 1968, and of Irina Belogorodskaya.) A charge was brought against Levitin under article 142 of the Russian Criminal Code (violation of the laws on the separation of Church and State) and also under article 190-1. Witnesses are being questioned about Krasnov-Levitin's works, mainly about *Stromati*.

On October 9th Levitin's case was suddenly handed over to the Krasnodar Procuracy, and A. E. Levitin-Krasnov was sent off to Krasnodar [in the north Caucasus].

Soon after Levitin's arrest, a letter began to circulate in *samizdat*, entitled 'To Public Opinion in the Soviet Union and Abroad', signed by thirty-two Soviet citizens, including six former political prisoners (Leonid Vasilev [see p. 120], Zinaida Grigorenko, Alexander Yessenin-Volpin, Victor Krasin, Vadim Shavrov and Pyotr Yakir). The letter says that A. E. Levitin 'was becoming more and more worried by problems of civil freedom, since freedom is indivisible and there can be no religious freedom if basic human rights are being trampled upon. He was the first religious person in our country in the post-Stalin years to affirm this truth and to raise his voice in defence of civil rights and of those who have fallen victims in the fight for civil freedoms.'

A letter by six Christian believers on the subject of A. Levitin-Krasnov's church and religious activities has been sent to the World Council of Churches, with copies to Patriarch Athenagoras, Pope Paul the Sixth and the International Committee for the Defence of Christian Culture. The letter says:

We deeply deplore the fact that the Russian Orthodox Church finds its supporters amongst laymen and ordinary priests, and not among the bishops of the Russian Church, many of whom are barren fig-trees, completely under the control of the Council for Religious Affairs . . . Anatoly Emmanuilovich was doing his duty as a Christian, and none of his activities, which were all in defence of the Christian faith, infringed Soviet laws . . . We, Christian believers and citizens of the Soviet Union, are deeply disturbed by the arrest of the Orthodox writer A. Levitin-Krasnov and [see below] the teacher B. Talantov. We join with them in their protest against the abnormal relations which exist between Church and State, and we demand the opening of the forcibly closed churches, monasteries, seminaries and houses of prayer.

The letter was signed by: J. Vishnevskaya, B. Dubovenko, V. Kokorev, V. Lashkova, E. Stroyeva and Yu. Titov [see plates 40 and 60].

For nearly a year Levitin sat in prison. No. 11 reported that the investigation was "expected to be completed in January 1970". It was. But then the Krasnodar Provincial Court "refused to accept the case and remitted it for further investigation, on the grounds that the charge of libel against Levitin was too vague, and that it was impossible to see exactly what law had been violated as a result of Levitin's incitement and by whom". The Procuracy appealed angrily to the Supreme Court against this unusual show of independence. At the same time it searched Father Yakunin's flat in Moscow, confiscating works by Levitin, and probably inspired the subsequent scurrilous attacks on Levitin, Yakunin, and Eshliman in the paper *Trud*. Nevertheless, the Supreme Court upheld the Krasnodar court's decision, and on August 11th Levitin was freed.

Undeterred by the continuation of the investigation, he quickly penned a long and vivid essay about his prison experiences before returning to jail with a three-year sentence in May 1971.

THE CASE OF BORIS TALANTOV

Chronicle readers first learnt of Boris Talantov (see plate 64) from a summary, in the samizdat section, of his "Statement to the U.S.S.R. Procurator-General":

This contains protests against the persecution to which the author, who lives in the city of Kirov [in the western foothills of the Urals], is being subjected for his opposition to interference by the Soviet authorities in the affairs of the Russian Orthodox Church, and to the acquiescence in this interference by the Church hierarchy.

Talantov's opposition had been vigorous since the early 1960s. Indeed it is from his pen that we have the most remarkable, vivid, detailed and horrifying picture of the effects of Khrushchev's anti-religious campaign on a typical provincial area. He has also written penetratingly on Church history, politics, and Metropolitan Nikodim, and he organized strong support from the Kirov diocese in 1968 for the two Moscow priests' attempt to reduce state control over the Church's life. Through all his writings run a deep love of the Church and its beautiful buildings, and a strong desire to rid Christians of their status as third-class citizens. Time and again he protests against this status, stressing its generally illegal basis. He also shows, with his references to the Baptists, his strong support for Pavel Litvinov and Larissa Daniel, and his condemnation of labour camp conditions, that, like Levitin, he understands the indivisibility of freedom, and that freedom for the Orthodox requires freedom for Baptists and intellectuals as well.

In the light of all this, the Chronicle's subsequent items about Talantov cause little surprise.

On June 12th, 1969 Boris Vladimirovich Talantov was arrested in the town of Kirov. He is a 66-year-old teacher of mathematics, who for many years has been exposing the illegal treatment of the Church, and the connivance in this of Church leaders. Talantov has been charged under article 190-1 of the Russian Criminal Code. The inquiry is being conducted by the Kirov Regional Procuracy, under senior investigator Boyarinov.

The Chronicle has already reported that the 66-year old B. V. Talantov, a teacher, was sentenced by a court in Kirov to two years in [ordinary-régime] camps. In this issue some details of his trial are given.

The trial opened on September 1st. A group of believers, who sympathized with the accused, tried to get into the courtroom, but the seats had, as usual, been filled in advance.

B. V. Talantov was charged under article 190-1 of the Russian Criminal Code with writing a number of articles of religious content, an article on the nature of the Soviet state, and various draft notes, including comments in the margin of a speech by L. I. Brezhnev. [He pleaded not guilty (No. 9).] Altogether only four witnesses were summoned in court, among them Gleb Talantov, son of the accused, and Nikodim Kamenskikh, a former seminarist. All the witnesses gave evidence in favour of the accused.

Besides the Procurator, a former pupil of Talantov's—who is now a teacher of dialectical materialism—spoke at the trial as a public prosecutor. Talantov's defence was conducted by the lawyer [V. Ya.] Shveisky.

The Procurator agreed with the defence lawyer that the draft notes should not be held against Talantov, but otherwise he upheld completely the charge laid against him, saying that he considered all Talantov's articles, including those of religious content, "deliberately false statements defaming the Soviet political and social system". The Procurator demanded three years in camps for Talantov. The defence completely refuted the charge relating to the articles of religious content. Concerning the article on the nature of the Soviet state, in which there were some sharp criticisms of the Soviet state, the defence lawyer, while he did not agree with the views expressed in the article, maintained that its author sincerely believed in the correctness of his statements, and consequently there was no element of deliberate falsification in the document.

In his final plea, B. V. Talantov reaffirmed his allegiance to his convictions, although he allowed that he might have shown a subjective approach in certain of his judgments. He said farewell to his relatives, since, in view of his age and the state of his health, he had no hopes of regaining his freedom.

On September 3rd the court pronounced him guilty.

A year later, on January 4th, 1971, Boris Talantov died in captivity. The Chronicle honoured him with a long obituary.

The Chronicle has also informed its readers of the man who provided the stimulus to the two Moscow priests by leading a delegation of eight bishops to complain to the Patriarch about Church administration in 1965—Archbishop Ermogen (see plate 62). For doing this he was retired to a monastery. Here, however, he applied himself to writing with the same outstanding success that he had achieved as a pastoral bishop. Thus the Chronicle could announce in 1968 the circulation in samizdat of two letters and a historical study:

The first of the letters written by Archbishop Ermogen to the Patriarchate (in which he disputes the legal validity of his dismissal) was written in November 1967, and the second in February 1968. In these letters he not only shows the illegality of his dismissal (brought about under pressure from the authorities as a reprisal for his staunch resistance to actions detrimental to the Church), but also attempts an analysis, from the point of view of both canon and secular law, of the whole question of relations between Church and State in the U.S.S.R.

There is an even more detailed study of this question in his article 'On the fiftieth anniversary of the re-establishment of the office of Patriarch' (December 25th, 1967) which makes numerous references to the decisions of the Ecumenical and National Councils of the Orthodox Church (including the National Council of the Russian Church of 1917-18).

But despite the restrained and dignified style in which Ermogen made his points and discussed the correct historical procedure for the election of a new Patriarch, the Synod proved unable either to accept or to answer his criticisms. Instead, it simply ordered him to shut up.

Another Orthodox writer to emerge into view—from the ancient Russian town of Pskov near the border with Estonia—has been the priest Sergei Zheludkov. Cultivated and intellectual, but also passionately concerned about the Christian's role in society, he is cast in many ways in the Levitin mould. His big samizdat book Why I Too Am a Christian reveals vividly his modern theological thinking. This is how the Chronicle comments on two of these letters:

In a letter to Pavel Litvinov, S. Zheludkov expresses his support for the appeal by Litvinov and Larissa Daniel, 'To world public opinion', and speaks of the aims shared by all 'people of goodwill' irrespectively of how they define their views.

The 'Letter on the Day of St. Nicholas and Victory Day' (May 9th, 1968) is addressed to the heads of various [foreign] churches. It was written after reading Marchenko's book *My Testimony*. Referring to this book, the author of the letter speaks of the grievous situation of political prisoners in the U.S.S.R. and calls on all Christians, and particularly their spiritual leaders, to speak up in their defence.

Before writing the second letter Zheludkov had already protested to his own rulers about the Soviet camps and mental hospitals. He had also generalized to them like his:

Even to me it is clear: the terrible decline of literature and art, the obvious failures in economic life, the mysterious apathy of our young people—all this is the result of the lack of creative freedom. No one is aiming to seize your power—govern, please, but let this be not so much a privilege as a responsibility. It cannot be that the fate of a great people now consists only of the negative results of the absurd phenomena produced by the suppression of freedom and the withering of the spirit.

The Chronicle also summarizes Zheludkov's samizdat essay 'Some Reflections on Intellectual Freedom: a Reply to Academician Sakharov' (see pp. 354-5):

The author gives his analysis of those absurdities to which society has succumbed as a result of Stalinism: fear, duplicity, apathy. Father Sergei studies the problem of intellectual freedom as a religious problem and states that 'man's freedom does not even belong to God', that 'freedom is man's absolute, holy right and his sacred duty'. But 'today', writes the author, 'all of us Russians, willingly or unwillingly, are involved in a momentous historical experiment on the following subject: What will happen to a great people if it is deprived of its intellectual freedom?'

THE BAPTISTS

More samizdat documents—over a hundred, in fact—are available in the West from the Baptists than from any other religious group. Many of these have appeared in translation with extensive commentaries. Yet until No. 16 the Chronicle had carried only two brief items on this denomination. That said, No. 16 eventually indicated the nature of the problem. The Baptist protests stem from a schism in the Church provoked by the official leadership. In 1960-61 the latter—doubtless under pressure from the authorities—attempted to impose tighter controls on Church life and

to reduce evangelism almost to nil. A grass-roots rebellion at once occurred, and the schismatic group began to campaign for greater religious freedom. In 1965 it set up its own organization, which the State has ever since refused to recognize, thus leaving the schismatic communities outside the law. One of the schismatic leaders is the subject of the open letter from the Kiev community summarized here by the Chronicle:

This letter is the latest in a series of similar ones of 1967 and is in defence of the Baptist preacher G. P. Vins, who was arrested in 1967 [in fact in 1966] and is being subjected to cruel treatment in a camp. The letter is signed by 176 members of the community in the name of 400 Kiev Baptists and Evangelical Christians.

The only other Baptist mentioned in the first eleven Chronicles is a man already noted (p. 206) as having taken part in a camp strike in 1968 with Yuly Daniel and others. The news in 1969 was:

Boris Zdorovets, a Baptist from the Donbass, who has spent seven years in a labour camp, has been exiled for five years to Krasnoyarsk Province; at his place of exile the police are carrying out 'educative' work on him, demanding that he publicly renounce his religion.

The Baptists—with perhaps several million adherents—are much less numerous than the Orthodox, with their several tens of millions, yet the volume of Baptist dissent is clearly greater. The poor reflection of this in the Chronicle doubtless stems from the fact that only a few Baptists come from the intellectual groups which mainly constitute Chronicle circles.

THE UNIATES

An important extra dimension is added to our picture of dissent in the west Ukraine by the following two items. The first is entitled 'New Persecution of Uniate Priests':

In spite of the U.S.S.R. Constitution, which guarantees freedom of conscience, the Greek-Catholic, or Uniate, Church was forcibly liquidated in 1944 [-46] by organs of the M.G.B. [now K.G.B.] in western Ukraine. Priests who did not adopt the Orthodox faith were sent to camps after false charges had been fabricated. The Uniate Church continued to function underground. Its activity has come to life in recent years, and at the same time the number of Uniate priests detained and beaten up by the police has grown. On October 18th, 1968, ten Uniate priests had their homes searched: legally permitted religious objects were confiscated, including even the Holy Sacrament—all this representing a flagrant encroachment into the sphere of religious ritual. At the end of 1968, two Uniate priests were arrested: one in Kolomiya, Ivano-Frankovsk Region, the other in Lvov. In January 1969, an underground bishop of the Greek-Catholic Church, Velychkovsky, was arrested. Velychkovsky is about seventy, he is ill and now in a prison hospital, where his condition is serious. The case is being conducted by the Lvov Procuracy: the charge is unknown. At the beginning of 1969 more searches were carried out in the homes of Uniate priests.

Now the Chronicle is in a position to give the following clarifications and additional information.

On October 18th, 1968, searches were carried out at the homes of ten priests of the former Lvov Greek-Catholic metropolitanate, including Bishop Vasyl Velychkovsky, the priests Petro Horodetsky, Mykola Ovsyanko, [Ihnaty] Tschelsky, [Ivan] Lopadchak, [Fylymon] Kurchava, [Mykola] Deyneka, [V.] Sternuk and others. Ritual objects (chalices, crosses, vestments, Holy Sacraments) as well as religious books, cameras, tape-recorders and money were taken away.

At the same time one of them, Petro Horodetsky, was arrested and charged under articles 187-1 and 138 of the Ukrainian Criminal Code, i.e. propagation of deliberate fabrications which defame the Soviet political and social system, and violation of the laws concerning the separation of Church and State. The investigation of his case was completed in April, and now the trial is awaited.

At the end of 1968 the aged Bishop Vasyl Velychkovsky was arrested in Kolomiya. At present rumours have spread to the effect that he has died in prison, but there is no official confirmation of this.

In the spring of 1969 all over the west Ukraine dozens of searches were carried out among Greek-Catholic priests, also in flats where former nuns were living. Again ritual objects, books, etc., were taken away.

In 1968 in Pochayev there was a meeting of West Ukrainian Orthodox priests—mainly those priests who went over to Orthodoxy under pressure in 1946. Some priests at the meeting complained that they were being interfered with by Greek-Catholic priests who had not accepted Orthodoxy, and that these priests were carrying on their religious activities underground; Metropolitan Filaret gave the Orthodox priests instructions to spy on the Uniates and report on them. He

promised to appeal to the party and government, and in person to the First Secretary of the Ukrainian Communist Party, Shelest, and to request him to put an end to the activity of the Greek-Catholic priests.

As the Uniates affirm, referring to information received from Orthodox priests, the court and Procuracy officials have been instructed to put a stop to the activity of the Greek-Catholic Church by all possible means in the course of one year—by the centenary of the birth of V. I. Lenin [in April 1970]. It looks as if precisely this was the reason for the arrests and large-scale searches.

In 1970 the Chronicle extended its range, reporting for the first time on the persecution of Roman Catholics, Adventists, Jehovah's Witnesses and the sectarian Truly-Orthodox Church.⁵⁸ All this helps to remind us that despite persecution, some of it built into the law, the U.S.S.R. is a more religious country than many secularized Western societies. Quite apart from private religious observance, perhaps as much as a quarter of the population dares to practise its religion openly, the proportion being higher in the Muslim areas, where Islam is ridden on a relatively light rein, than elsewhere. Part of the reason for this religiosity lies in the failure of the aridly official Marxism-Leninist ideology to satisfy most Soviet citizens as a philosophy for living. While this failure worries the regime, what really alarms it is when the only legally and widely available alternative to Marxism-Leninism—religion, in one or another form—becomes an ideological basis for political opposition. To some extent this has begun to happen. It may well do so increasingly in the future.

BAPTIST TRIAL IN ODESSA, FEBRUARY 2-7, 1967

[“Russian Christians on Trial: Eye Witness Report From a Soviet Courtroom,” Published by “Jesus to the Communist World,” Diane Books, Glendale, Calif., 1971]

The trial was due to take place at 10 a.m. on 2 February in the club of the mill combine. Its location was altered 24 hours beforehand without any reason being given. Representatives were summoned from a number of places, mainly Party officials and prominent workers, and given leave from work to attend.

By 10 a.m. about 100 believers had assembled, by which time the courtroom was already full of Party workers. Numerous police and the security (KGB) agents were standing outside the building where the trial was to be held. Not only did they prevent the believers from getting into the courtroom, they even stopped them standing outside the building. They chased them some distance away from the clubhouse, round the corner, threatening them with fines and 15 days' imprisonment. Many friends did not go away, but stood at a distance, despite the intense cold.

They let only the defendants' nearest relatives through, claiming that there was no more room in the court.

The defendants N. P. Shevchenko, Ya. N. Krivoi, S. P. Solovyova and V. I. Alexeeva, who had already been in custody for some considerable time, were brought into the courtroom. Then further defendants who had been bound over not to leave the town, G. G. Borushko, V. T. Timchak and V. M. Zaborsky, came in.

The members of the court entered and the trial was officially opened. A representative of the police called out (addressing himself to the rest of the court) “Rise!” The defendants took their places, N. P. Shevchenko and V. Alexeeva knelt down and the former prayed aloud. Everyone present stood speechless with surprise.

Then there was a murmur throughout the room and you could hear people say: “They're praying!” Three policemen went up to them and made Valya get up, but Nikolai went on praying and when he finished, all the defendants and other believers said “Amen”. The defendants were taken out of the courtroom straight away and brought back a little while later.

The court noted the following personal details of the defendants:

Shevchenko, Nikolai Pavlovich, born 1913.

Krivoi, Yakov Nikiforovich, born 19... (date not given in text)

Solovyova, Svetlana Pavlovna, born 1940.

Alexeeva, Valentina Ivanovna, born 1939.

Borushko, Grigori Grigorievich, born 1939.

Zaborsky, Viktor Mikhailovich, born 1936.

Timchak, Vasili Terentievich, born 1929.

Charged under Article 138, Section II, of the Ukrainian Penal Code, Case No. 16827.

The judge defined the defendants' rights.

JUDGE. (to the defendants) What are your requests?

All the defendants asked that their fellow-believers be allowed into the courtroom and requested the right to conduct their own defense.

G. Borushko and V. Zaborsky demanded that the prosecution witnesses N. V. Kuzmenko, district superintendent of the Odessa Region, and his deputy F. A. Balaban, and also senior police lieutenant Shamrai, be called.

Solovyova and Krivoi asked permission to use a Bible in their defense.

JUDGE. Alexeeva, why are you refusing to have a defense counsel?

ALEXEEVA. I invited Jesus Christ to be my defense a long time ago (she quotes a Bible text but the judge interrupts her).

JUDGE. For what reasons are you refusing a defense counsel?

KRIVOI. "My witness is in heaven, and my record is on high" (Job 16:19).

SHEVCHENKO. As a believer, I can't be defended by an atheist; God is my defence.

SOLOVYOVA. If a person is mentally balanced (according to Art. 146) he has the right to conduct his own defence.

PROSECUTOR. I consider it admissible to grant the defendants' requests about dispensing with counsel and giving them the right to conduct their own defence. The request for the summoning of additional witnesses is inadmissible. As to the request for believers to be present in court, the door is open and entry is free to all, everyone who wanted to come in is already here. With regard to the request by Solovyova and Krivoi for a Bible to use in the defence, this question will resolve itself in the course of the trial. The opportunity to use a Bible will be given as necessary.

The defence lawyers requested that the defendants' plea for permission to use a Bible and for the calling of additional witnesses be granted, then they left the courtroom.

The judge asked the defendants' opinion on how the trial should be conducted.

Solovyova and Borushko suggested that interrogation begin with the witnesses. The prosecutor suggested that they begin with the defendants. There was an interval while the members of the court left for a consultation. After the interval, none of the believers was admitted into the court. The judge declared that the interrogation would begin with the defendants.

JUDGE (to Shevchenko). What relevant testimony can you give the court?

SHEVCHENKO. I won't give my testimony until all my fellow-believers who are outside are admitted to the courtroom. They are freezing out there, I can imagine what it's like. How can we consider the case calmly here in these circumstances?

The judge demanded that the actual names be given of those whom the defendants wanted to see admitted. They let a few in and said that that was all there were.

N. P. Shevchenko addressed himself to the gallery and asked: "Brothers and sisters, are there some outside who want to come in?"

From the gallery came the reply: "Yes, there are!"

In the gallery, the atheists began to ask: "Who on earth's in charge here, the court or the Baptists?" But just then the believers outside were being chased further away from the courthouse.

JUDGE. Krivoi, give your testimony.

KRIVOI. I won't give my testimony until all those who want to have come in.

The rest of the defendants also refused to testify until all the believers had been admitted.

JUDGE. Defendant Borushko, go out with the police lieutenant-colonel and call everybody to come in.

Borushko went out and gathered all the believers who were in the next street, round the corner, and brought them in.

JUDGE. Shevchenko, what relevant testimony can you give? Tell us your work record. When did you become a Christian? How and in what circumstances did you become an invalid from work?

SHEVCHENKO. I began to work at the age of 16 and became an invalid in 1934 as the result of an accident at work. I became a believer in that same year.

JUDGE. How long have you been a pastor?

SHEVCHENKO. The Church elected me as an elder in 1946 and in 1949 as pastor.

JUDGE. But why were you not elected as a pastor in 1946?

SHEVCHENKO. Because the Church had to test my manner of life. It is only when the Church has ascertained whether a man's life corresponds to the gospel and is convinced that its servant is worthy, that it elects him as a pastor.

JUDGE. What is the difference between the office of pastor and the office of elder?

SHEVCHENKO. An elder can lead a Church meeting, but only a pastor can fulfil spiritual needs.

JUDGE. Was there any break in your activity as pastor?

SHEVCHENKO. A pastor is elected for life.

JUDGE. When you were in places of imprisonment, were you still a pastor?

SHEVCHENKO. Yes, I was still a pastor during those times too.

JUDGE. Tell us why registration was suspended from your congregation, when and for what reasons?

SHEVCHENKO. Registration was suspended in 1958 because an official representative of the Council for Religious Affairs was not invited to the opening of the prayer house and because children were present at services.

JUDGE. Did you continue to meet after the congregation was dissolved?

SHEVCHENKO. Yes we did, but we kept on requesting to be registered the whole time. We applied to Kiev and Moscow for registration several times.

JUDGE. Up to 1958 you accepted the legislation on religious cults?

SHEVCHENKO. It wasn't in operation.

JUDGE. Do you accept the legislation on cults now?

SHEVCHENKO. Yes, I accept it, but I can't agree with certain points.

JUDGE. Name these points.

SHEVCHENKO. We aren't allowed to admit children to services, but it's written in the gospel: "Suffer the little children to come unto me and forbid them not." We weren't allowed to baptize believers under 30 years of age. According to the gospel baptism is carried out on the basis of faith, not age.

We don't agree with the section that forbids freedom to preach outside our own congregation.

Only the Church must elect and dismiss pastors and preachers, but according to the legislation, the official state representative appoints them. The Church is best able to judge who is fit to serve in it, not a secular functionary.

I have already been tried once before and the same charges were brought against me. I served 2 years and 7 months in prison. The Prosecutor-General protested against my sentence, the court reviewed the case and in the absence of proof of criminal action I was rehabilitated, but now the same accusations are being brought again.

JUDGE. At that time there was no such law, but now these activities are countered under the March 1966 decree.

PROSECUTOR. When you were under detention, did you maintain your link with the church?

SHEVCHENKO. We were behind barbed wire fences and you know perfectly well that there's no chance there of maintaining any link.

JUDGE (undoes a parcel and takes out the collection: "Ray of Light"). Look, these aren't just written things, you can tell by the format that they've been done by a specialist. Look at this binding. Where did you get the money for it? Have you any specific funds?

SHEVCHENKO. We don't have any funds. When there's a need, we have a collection. At all our funeral services we get financial help and also believers collect money to buy paper and materials.

JUDGE. Give us the names of those who did the printing.

SHEVCHENKO. I won't answer that question.

JUDGE. Do you know who brought illegal literature to your congregation?

SHEVCHENKO. All believers.

JUDGE. What do you mean, all believers? Who specifically? You say you didn't help to distribute literature. Yannu Shmidt testifies that he got the "Fraternal Leaflet" in your house.

SHEVCHENKO. I didn't consider this as distribution; I was sharing with my brother the Word of God, since the Word of God is the bread of life and spiritual food and our Christian duty is to share.

YA. N. KRIVOI'S TESTIMONY

JUDGE. What have you to say about this case?

KRIVOI. In 1937 I was sentenced to 10 years for my faith in God. I was in prison for 9 years and 6 months. After that my case was reviewed and in the absence of criminal proof I was rehabilitated. Along with me my fellow-believers were sentenced to 25 years' imprisonment and to the supreme punishment—execution. And they were shot. After the review of their cases they were posthumously rehabilitated.

JUDGE (interrupting him). We aren't asking you about that. You were rehabilitated and the previous trial doesn't count. What congregations did you belong to before? When did you become a member of Peresyp congregation?

KRIVOI. In 1963.

JUDGE. Why did you leave the registered congregation? What were your disagreements with them?

KRIVOI. Because a state official was interfering in the internal life of the Church.

JUDGE. You were a member of the illegal all-Ukrainian conference; what documents did you sign there?

KRIVOI. I signed a document, but I don't remember the contents now.

JUDGE. Did you preach at the May-Day celebration?

KRIVOI. No, I wasn't there.

JUDGE. What part did you have in organizing the May-Day meeting?

KRIVOI. I have already answered.

PROSECUTOR. In the pre-trial investigation you said (he quotes): "I stood leaning against a tree. . ."

KRIVOI. That's false. The investigator wrote that himself, I didn't say it.

PROSECUTOR. The court will check on that (he refers to the report on the affair).

JUDGE. It can't be checked. The defendant hasn't signed it. What were you doing on that day?

KRIVOI. I have proof that I was working on 2nd May.

PROSECUTOR. The court will find out whether you were there or not. Who preached in Gomenyuk's house?

KRIVOI. I was outside and I didn't see the speakers.

JUDGE. Witnesses have testified that you preached.

KRIVOI. I've already answered.

PROSECUTOR. You're obviously avoiding a reply. Who distributed the literature?

KRIVOI. I've nothing to do with that side of things.

JUDGE. You say that in your literature there's nothing but evangelical teaching (he reads an extract from an "appeal" to all believers of registered congregations).

KRIVOI. Read the whole "appeal"—I can't answer from extracts.

PROSECUTOR. I'll read you the exact quotation from this document (he reads it).

KRIVOI. Read on, so that the audience can understand what it's about.

PROSECUTOR. Do you remember what documents you signed?

KRIVOI. Yes, I remember. I don't repudiate those documents that I signed and I'm fully in agreement with their contents.

SVETLANA PAVLOVNA SOLOVYOVA'S TESTIMONY

JUDGE. Defendant Solovyova, do you admit your guilt?

SOLOVYOVA. No. I'm charged with distributing literature. I don't consider that a crime. It's my duty.

JUDGE. What's your profession?

SOLOVYOVA. Painter.

JUDGE. Have you been working as a painter recently too?

SOLOVYOVA. No, I've been on watch duty.

JUDGE. But you also worked in a laundry?

SOLOVYOVA. Yes, I did both.

JUDGE. Tell us, do you enjoy your work?

SOLOVYOVA. Yes, I do.

JUDGE. When did you become a believer?

SOLOVYOVA. Can I start from the beginning?

JUDGE. By all means.

SOLOVYOVA. I came to Odessa as a child. My father had reenlisted and worked at headquarters, and remained there as a painter. I went to evening classes. At home I often heard about God and about believers, but it didn't interest me. I wanted to live like everybody else. My mother was illiterate, she didn't make me go to meetings or believe in God. I grew up with the same aims and the same desires as my fellow-pupils, thinking that only uneducated and old folk believed in God. In school I joined the *Komsomol*. After I had finished school, I was faced with the question of where to go and what to do then. I got a job. I didn't want to stay at home because the conversations about God and my mother's continual prayers and all that religious environment disturbed and haunted me.

I decided to leave home. I told my parents that I was going to enter an institute in Novosibirsk. I said it deliberately, knowing it was a lie. But I couldn't see any

other way out and I deceived my relatives and went to Novosibirsk. I took my personal documents with me but I hadn't given in my notice at work, having arranged with my own people that if I didn't pass the exams I'd come back. In Novosibirsk I applied to the institute, but as I hadn't prepared for it and wasn't really keen on it, I didn't get in. But I sent a telegram home: "Passed exams, give notice at work. Staying to study." That's how my life away from home started, a life that began with deception.

Sometimes I used to think: "Does God exist or not?"

JUDGE (interrupting her). This thought stayed with you because they knocked it into you in childhood.

SOLOVYOVA. They didn't knock it into me. If my mother had brought me up in that spirit, I wouldn't have been there, I wouldn't have deceived my parents. I simply knew that believers existed and that they believed in God and sometimes I thought about that, but the cinema, the theatre and all the worldly pursuits didn't leave room for such thoughts and I forgot about them.

After working for a year in Novosibirsk, I came home on leave for 10 days. At home my mother invited me to a meeting, and so as not to grieve her, I went. There I heard about God more fully. This thought stayed in my mind and I began to think about this question more seriously. It didn't leave me in Novosibirsk either, it followed me everywhere. I couldn't stay in those circumstances any longer and I was tortured in my conscience for having deceived my parents. It was a difficult time for me, these were the fruits of the world's education. And then I had the idea of going home. All this happened very quickly. I gave in my notice at work, broke with everything that held me back and came home. At home I straight away began to seek satisfaction and peace for my soul. The world no longer satisfied me. Everything in it revolted me.

Once I went to a meeting at Peresyp. There I heard comforting words. I saw the joyful, happy faces of girls and boys just like me, I saw their goal in life and I understood that here I could find what I had long been seeking—peace for my soul. Here was my happiness, Christ became my goal in life. The Church at Peresyp became my spiritual mother. I found my place in life, I found happiness.

PROSECUTOR. Defendant Solovyova, you have taken up too much time with the story of how you became a believer. It would be better if you would tell us how you distributed illegal literature and whether you consider this a crime.

SOLOVYOVA. I distributed illegal Christian literature and I don't consider this a crime, since it's my duty to give bread to the hungry. I did it with a feeling of compassion, people were interested and I couldn't refuse them. I did distribute literature and I shall go on doing so, if I still have the opportunity, for it's my duty.

JUDGE. You also preached and you don't consider that a crime?

SOLOVYOVA. I haven't preached in the sense that you mean, but all believers are preachers of the Kingdom.

JUDGE. Just imagine what it would be like if everybody in this country began to preach what he liked and wherever he liked, no matter whether people listened to him or not.

SOLOVYOVA. I did no more than speak about Christ—and only where people listened or where they asked me to.

PROSECUTOR. You say you preach only about Christ and that your literature is purely spiritual, but look at this: (he reads an extract from a copy of *Fraternal Leaflet* about the May delegation (1966), where it says that believers were beaten up outside the Central Committee building and remarks indignantly): Is that about Christ? Why, that's slander against Soviet reality.

SOLOVYOVA. It certainly is Soviet reality: I well remember the first blow I got outside the Central Committee building—after that I don't remember the others.

JUDGE. 14 copies of *Fraternal Leaflet* were taken from your flat. Where did you get them? Somebody must have done them and given them to you.

SOLOVYOVA. I'm not going to tell you that. I just got them.

JUDGE. How many did you distribute? 50, 100, 200 copies?

SOLOVYOVA. I don't remember. I tried to give out as many as I could.

JUDGE. Were you there at the May-Day meeting? Do you remember how many people were there?

SOLOVYOVA. I can't tell you. I didn't count them.

JUDGE. But roughly—a hundred, two hundred, five hundred people?

SOLOVYOVA. I don't know, maybe even more. (In the gallery there are astonished exclamations: "You see!")

JUDGE. Do you know the people who were there on May Day?

SOLOVYOVA. I know that they were my brothers and sisters.

JUDGE. Was the defendant Krivoi there?
SOLOVYOVA. No.
JUDGE. How can you tell—could you see all 500 people?
SOLOVYOVA. Yes, I saw them all.
JUDGE. Please tell us what your relations are with the registered congregation.
SOLOVYOVA. What should my relations with them be? They're my brothers and sisters there.
PROSECUTOR. Defendant Solovyova, you said that you were convinced the cinema is a means of agitation—what sort of agitation?
SOLOVYOVA. What do you mean, agitation? It's a means of taking people away from God.
PROSECUTOR. You said that the people in the central congregation are your brothers and sisters?
SOLOVYOVA. Yes, that's right.
PROSECUTOR. Why don't you go there?
SOLOVYOVA. In the first place, as I already said, the church at Peresyp is my spiritual mother. It's my family, that's where I was born.
JUDGE. You mean that in your family you have 'brothers' and 'cousins'?
SOLOVYOVA. Yes, that's right.
JUDGE. What do you consider to be wrong in the central congregation?
SOLOVYOVA. The authorities interfere in the Church there and poison the minds of believers against each other.
JUDGE. Did they do that to you personally?
SOLOVYOVA. Not to me personally. I remember once when I was still going there often—they took a woman out of the meeting; she was a small person and they thought she was a minor.
JUDGE. Who took her out?
SOLOVYOVA (uncertainly). Believers.
JUDGE. What have the authorities to do with that?
SOLOVYOVA. What do you mean, what have they to do with it? It was they who ordered her to be taken out and they had the power to do it.
JUDGE. Do you read books?
SOLOVYOVA. Yes, I used to. Even in prison now I still read.
JUDGE. But there aren't any books about Christ there.
SOLOVYOVA. I can get something precious out of anything.
JUDGE. Very true. Tell us, did you preach at the May-Day meeting?
SOLOVYOVA. I don't remember whether I ever preached at meetings.
JUDGE. Are you a member of the Council of Twenty (Church Council)?
SOLOVYOVA. Yes.
JUDGE. Why did the Church elect you particularly?
SOLOVYOVA. Why do you want to know about me particularly? There are 19 others besides me.
JUDGE. Did you stand out in some way from the rest of the rank and file?
SOLOVYOVA. No, I don't think so. I'm not worthy of that. I'm not worthy to stand before you today, since only the best Christians are brought to trial.
JUDGE. When your flat was searched, they took copies of the Kiev declaration. Why did you keep them?
SOLOVYOVA. To give to others.
JUDGE. Have you already given out a lot?
SOLOVYOVA. I don't remember. I gave them out when necessary.
JUDGE. What would happen if everybody preached his own beliefs and got a crowd of followers around him? Maybe there are some people who don't want to listen to you.
SOLOVYOVA. I'd be very glad if I had the chance and the strength to gather a crowd around me. If some people didn't want to listen, I wouldn't force it on anybody.
JUDGE. Why did you give your boss copies of your pamphlet-letters at work?
SOLOVYOVA. Every day at work a policeman used to come to see me. All the workers began to get curious about why he came. I started to explain and gave them out for people to read.
JUDGE. Did you preach?
SOLOVYOVA. You keep calling me a preacher. In your sense I'm not, but as a Christian I must preach by my life and I spoke about Christ wherever I could, when I had the chance. I speak about Christ on trams and now in this hall and I'll go on doing so.

While their friends were being taken out, all the believers stood in flanking rows and when the defendants passed between them they greeted them with raised hands. Both the defendants and their friends had joyful expressions on their faces. Thus finished the first day of the trial.

On the second day everybody who wanted to came into the courtroom. They brought in the defendants. Valya Alexeeva came first and greeted everybody aloud: "Greetings to all brothers and sisters!" From the audience came the reply, "Greetings to you." The defendants took their places and prayed standing.

The trial was declared open.

JUDGE. Alexeeva, what have you to say about the case?

ALEXEEVA. First of all I want to know whether all my friends have been let in. (They answered that everybody had come in.)

JUDGE. Tell us about yourself. Where did you come from to live in Odessa?

ALEXEEVA. From the Vologda Region.

JUDGE. What was the reason for your coming here?

ALEXEEVA. I was fulfilling the command of Christ: "If they persecute you in one town, flee to the next".

JUDGE. But how were you being oppressed there?

ALEXEEVA. Well, there was only a small group of believers there and atheists and lecturers used to visit me systematically.

JUDGE. So you were frightened?

ALEXEEVA. No, I enjoyed chatting with them. But when they realized that their visits were pointless, then the press started up. They wrote a lot of slanderous articles about me. You know very well how we hold baptisms, but in the paper they wrote a lot of lies—even that my veins were cut and believers drank my blood.

JUDGE. They wrote about you personally in the paper?

ALEXEEVA. Yes, directly about me. Once they did it using a false name, but in such a way that it was obvious it was me. They never left me alone, neither at home nor at work. That was why I left.

JUDGE. Were you invited to come to Odessa?

ALEXEEVA. No, I tried to find out where there was a prayer house and young believers.

JUDGE. Is there a prayer house in Razdelnaya?

ALEXEEVA. No, but there are some not far away.

JUDGE. Did you distribute literature?

ALEXEEVA. Yes I did.

JUDGE. Do you know the Gubanovs?

ALEXEEVA. Yes, they're my good friends.

PROSECUTOR. Did you send letters to them?

ALEXEEVA. Yes.

PROSECUTOR. Did they ask you to send them?

ALEXEEVA. No, but they wanted to meet me personally to have a talk. But I couldn't manage that, and I wrote to them about the life of our family (the Church) and sent them the *Fraternal Leaflet*.

JUDGE. Are you in agreement with the legislation on religion?

ALEXEEVA. Yes, except for some points.

JUDGE. What points do you not agree with?

ALEXEEVA. We're forbidden to help each other. That contradicts the gospel. We can't disobey the commands of Christ. Our faith must be accompanied by works, for faith without works is dead. It says in the gospel: "Add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; and to knowledge temperance; and to temperance (the judge tries to interrupt) patience; and to patience godliness; and to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity."

JUDGE. Were you there on May Day?

ALEXEEVA. I wasn't there on 1st, but I was on 2nd.

JUDGE. Who else was there of the defendants?

ALEXEEVA. I remember Nikolai Pavlovich Shevchenko was, we sat together, away from the crowd and listened.

JUDGE. Who preached? What part did you take?

ALEXEEVA. Guests preached and read poems. I had a poem, but I gave my place up to others who had come from other towns.

JUDGE. Does the literature which was taken from Tikhenko belong to you?

ALEXEEVA. Yes.

GRIGORI GRIGORIEVICH BORUSHKO'S TESTIMONY

JUDGE. Defendant Borushko, what have you to say?

BORUSHKO. Your honour, I request permission first of all to clarify the contents of the charge brought against me. Then I am ready to answer any questions the court wants to put. I am accused of the systematic distribution of illegal literature during 1965-66 on the premises of the prayer house of the Odessa Church. That's a lie. I never distributed any literature on the premises of the Odessa Church.

JUDGE. You said at the pre-trial investigation that at one time this literature used to be at your house.

BORUSHKO. I didn't sign the protocol of the pre-trial investigation—the investigator wrote what he wanted to.

I have been charged with organizing and holding a service on 2nd May in the forest plantation near Shevchenko's farm, which was supposed to have caused a public nuisance by disrupting normal running of road and rail transport in the said district and to have caused material damage to the forest plantation. I've been in Odessa 10 years now and every year I've been at the May-Day service and it's never been brought against me. The court has photographs of the May-Day service in 1965, at which believers from other congregations were also present. That tells you that the May-Day service is something traditional and there's no special organization needed for it.

I personally came to the plantation about 9 a.m. Some fellow-believers were already there. We found our clearing and began to make ready. We hung up a text: "You who remember the Lord, do not be silent!" The meeting began at 11 a.m. I took an active part in conducting the service. Krivoi wasn't there at all, Shevchenko took absolutely no part in it. I preached on the theme of "God the Creator of the universe" on the basis of Romans 1:20.

I spoke of how the world is regulated and develops according to certain laws as revealed by the scientists, but there must also exist the One Who made these laws, that is God. If we look at the world around us, we see many different objects made by the hand of man, but there are things—animals and the plant world—the author of which we have difficulty in identifying. They didn't create themselves. But there wasn't any appeal in my sermon to break the laws on religion. I can't even imagine how that could be associated with such a theme. We played and sang, and generally spent a good day. Then some auxiliary police came up, but they behaved properly. In the end they listened for a bit, stayed a little longer and then gradually dispersed. We picked up all the litter and burned it. What's wrong with that?

PROSECUTOR. Why did you break the law and meet without being registered?

BORUSHKO. I don't consider that we broke the law, according to one basic law, the decree of Lenin, point 5: "Free celebration of religious rites is guaranteed, insofar as they do not disturb public order and do not infringe the rights of citizens of the Soviet republic." Our meetings in flats do not cause a public nuisance and are not connected with any infringement of the rights of other citizens. So the 1929 law contradicts Lenin's decree in this matter.

PROSECUTOR. You aren't interpreting it properly. If you read on, point 6 is: "A citizen's first obligation is the duty to keep Soviet law."

BORUSHKO. I consider my first obligation as a citizen is my duty to work. I work in a factory . . .

PROSECUTOR. What else do you disagree with in the legislation?

BORUSHKO. It violates the principle of the separation of church and state. State officials have the right to remove a pastor.

PROSECUTOR. You appoint another one.

BORUSHKO. He's removed again and a month is given to elect a new one. Otherwise they suspend registration. Shevchenko was removed, Logvinenko was elected, and he was removed by the official, too.

PROSECUTOR. Is there anything else you don't agree with?

BORUSHKO. General meetings for church members can be held only with the permission of the Party district executive committee. For example, if we need to elect a pastor, we have to ask permission from the committee. They may not allow the meeting to take place. That's interference by the state in the internal affairs of the Church.

PROSECUTOR. You signed and duplicated copies of a Declaration on the suspension of Article 124 of the Constitution.*

*Guaranteeing the "freedom to hold religious services and the freedom of anti-religious propaganda". Lenin's original constitution had proclaimed the right to "religious propaganda."

BORUSHKO. That was the first such declaration, since we knew that a new constitution was being worked out and we as citizens placed our request with the Legal Draft Commission that Article 124 be formulated in such a way as to guarantee complete freedom of conscience. As believers, we did what Christ said: "Ask and it will be given unto you, knock and it will be opened unto you."

JUDGE. In the letter "On unity" you criticize the religious decree which allows believers to participate in cultural life, to go to the cinema and the theatre, and you add: "It's impossible to imagine a more satanic programme."

BORUSHKO. That decree is a document of the official religious body (All-Union Council) and the state has nothing to do with it. So you're condemning us for not fulfilling that decree?

JUDGE. For what reason did you write that letter?

BORUSHKO. Our whole Church at Perysyp went to the town Church to talk about unity. But when that discussion didn't materialize, we had to address them by letter.

PEOPLE'S ASSESSOR. You said that the legislation was adopted in the period of the cult of personality. You don't know your history.

BORUSHKO. Let me correct that. In the period of Stalin's activity, when there were significant religious restrictions.

ASSESSOR. The last Baptist congress was in 1926. When did you finish at the institute?

BORUSHKO. They finished me.

ASSESSOR. Why did they expel you from the institute?

BORUSHKO. For my religious convictions. They told me I wouldn't get through in the subject of atheism.

ASSESSOR. Quite right too.

BORUSHKO. You know, this man (pointing to the Assessor) should be tried under the same law.

ASSESSOR. Did you pass in histology?

BORUSHKO. Yes, with the assessment "excellent".

ASSESSOR. So you studied embryology, the science of the development of man. How did you reconcile that with your convictions?

BORUSHKO. In order to speak about the emergence of life, you have to go back to the question of the emergence of the first living cell. There's Oparin's hypothesis, which is still only a hypothesis, that is, a surmise, and unproved.

ASSESSOR. What do you mean? It's been proved by science.

BORUSHKO. It's been proved. When I was at college, Professor Olga Borisnova Lepeshinskaya experimented on a chicken embryo and made a cell out of a non-cellular substance. They gave her the Order of Lenin. Then they checked it and the experiment proved to be false. So the Order of Lenin had to go back. (Laughter in the court, the Judge makes a remark to the People's Assessor.)

PROSECUTOR. Why are children present at your meetings?

BORUSHKO. I'm amazed that our comrade the Prosecutor says children have no right to go to the meetings. I don't know any law that forbids children to attend meetings. The existing law forbids only the organization of meetings specifically for children.

ASSESSOR. You came to Odessa as a young man—were you already a believer?

BORUSHKO. My views were formed during my time as a student.

ASSESSOR. Didn't your elder brother Sergei have any influence on you?

BORUSHKO. Maybe to some extent. But really a man is born again by the Word of God.

ASSESSOR. Is your wife a believer too?

BORUSHKO. She shares my views.

VICTOR MIKHAILOVICH ZABORSKY'S TESTIMONY

ZABORSKY. I plead not guilty to the charge against me.

JUDGE. How long have you been in Odessa?

ZABORSKY. Since 1956.

JUDGE. Where did you come from? In what connection and to whom?

ZABORSKY. I came from Khabarovsk, after being demobilized. I came to relatives.

JUDGE. When did you become a believer?

ZABORSKY. When I was in the Soviet Army.

JUDGE. When did you have a chance to occupy yourself with such matters there?

ZABORSKY. You don't need a long time to become a believer.

JUDGE: What's your job?
ZABORSKY. Stoker.
JUDGE: Did you help to organize the distribution of literature?
ZABORSKY. I'm charged with distributing illegal and slanderous literature. I didn't distribute any such literature.
PROSECUTOR. But witnesses have testified that you did.
ZABORSKY. I asked that they should say it to my face.
PROSECUTOR. Did you preach?
ZABORSKY. Yes, I did.
PROSECUTOR. Did you speak in Gomenyuk's house, on May Day?
ZABORSKY. No, I wasn't there at all on 1st May.
PROSECUTOR. Were your children there?
ZABORSKY. Yes, they were.

VASIL TIMCHAK'S TESTIMONY

JUDGE. Tell us about yourself, why did you come to Odessa?
TIMCHAK. I came here from Tarnopol Region in 1956 and I liked Odessa.
JUDGE. Were you already a believer?
TIMCHAK. Yes.
JUDGE. Where did you meet other believers?
TIMCHAK. At the prayer house.
JUDGE. What did you do in Odessa?
TIMCHAK. I worked in a factory, first as a brick-layer, then as a tinsmith.
JUDGE. When you came, was there a prayer house at Peresyp?
TIMCHAK. No, we met in people's houses.
JUDGE. Did you go to conferences in Moscow?
TIMCHAK. Yes I did.
JUDGE. Did you preach?
TIMCHAK. Yes. But you accuse me of calling people to ignore Soviet laws. I never made any such appeal in my sermons.
PROSECUTOR. Were you at the All-Union Conference in Moscow?
TIMCHAK. Yes I was. We adopted a declaration, but there wasn't any appeal in it not to obey Soviet laws.
PROSECUTOR. Were you summoned to the district executive committee?
TIMCHAK. Yes.
PROSECUTOR. You were at the conference—what resolutions did you make there?
TIMCHAK. Yes I was there. We decided Church matters.
PROSECUTOR. Why did you, personally, particularly go to Moscow?
TIMCHAK. The Church elected me.
PROSECUTOR. Why did you all go to Moscow?
TIMCHAK. Because we weren't being allowed to have a congress, to which we had a right.
PROSECUTOR. Do you accept the legislation on religious cults?
TIMCHAK. Yes, but I disagree with certain points.
PROSECUTOR. Which ones?
TIMCHAK. The legislation forbids us to give one another practical assistance. It gives state officials the right to remove a pastor. (He enumerates other points.)
JUDGE. What questions did you decide at the Moscow conference?
TIMCHAK. We wrote a declaration to the government and asked them to recognize our brethren, the Council of Churches. The Council itself was elected.
JUDGE. Where did the regional conference take place?
TIMCHAK. I can't answer that question.
(Here follow the testimonies of the witnesses. First to be called is Nikolaev, a Komsomol official. His testimony against the defendants contradicts what he said at the pre-investigation and reveals, as do later testimonies of other witnesses, the manipulation of the case for the prosecution.)
(In the testimony of the witness L. A. Kuprianov there is still further evidence of the difficulties besetting believers on account of the legislation on religion.)
JUDGE. Do you respect Soviet laws?
NIKOLAEV. Why shouldn't we respect them? You ask at work how often I do two shifts in a row; that shows you how I respect them.
JUDGE. All right, but the legislation on religion is also a Soviet law.
NIKOLAEV. The legislation on religion affects believers only. We can't fulfill those points in the legislation which are contrary to the gospel. For example, we

as believers elect a man for spiritual work, then a state official interferes and has the right to remove him. We elect somebody else, and he doesn't like him either.

JUDGE. Whom precisely did you elect?

NIKOLAEV. In our congregation we elected Logvinenko, but the state official turned him down.

There's another point I don't agree with. The legislation forbids us to give each other material help. Now I'm in a trade union, and if somebody falls ill or dies, we help towards the funeral wreaths or assist the sick person. Is that wrong?

JUDGE. But what if he's not working?

NIKOLAEV. If he doesn't work then he should be tried as an idler. There's a law about that. But how can we refuse to help if there's an old woman among us who gets 13 rubles pension (£6 a month)—you have to buy her wood and coal.

JUDGE (reads points from the legislation). This giving of financial help is forbidden, but nobody forbids you to give practical help.

NIKOLAEV. What do you mean, nobody forbids it! Some believers once went to the home of an old blind lady to dig her vegetable garden and vineyard—the auxiliary police came along and chased them away. Suppose my house burned down, for example, do you think the believers wouldn't help me? Would you help, brothers and sisters? (He turns to the gallery, answers are heard "Yes, yes!") . . . And another thing, if a man is elected to serve in one congregation, for example in Shevchenkovo, or Peresyp, or in town, then the minister of Peresyp congregation isn't allowed to preach in town and vice versa. But the Lord says, "Go ye into all the world and preach the Gospel to every creature."

(The testimony of several witnesses follows).

JUDGE. Have you seen believers gathering for a meeting?

WITNESS YAKOVCHENKO (an unbeliever). Yes, they come in one way and go out another. They gather in an orderly and quiet way, and by 9 o'clock they're all gone, not a trace of a soul.

JUDGE. What do they do at meetings?

WITNESS. They sing and play, very nicely. They've even got a string orchestra, you can hear it through the whole village.

JUDGE. So they cause a public nuisance?

WITNESS. God forbid, they're such quiet folks, they couldn't be a public nuisance.

BORUSKHO. Tell us, witness, was there an appeal in my sermons not to obey the legislation on religion?

WITNESS PARADOVSKAYA (17 years old). Yes there was.

BORUSKHO. What form did it take?

WITNESS. You said, "God is love". (Laughter in court).

S. P. SOLOVYOVA'S DEFENSE SPEECH

Comrade Judges! For 4 months now, while the investigation was going on, they've been trying to prove to me that I'm not accused because I'm a believer, but because I've broken the Soviet legislation on religion.

In 1918 Lenin's decree on the separation of church and state was promulgated, guaranteeing all citizens freedom of conscience.

I'm charged with misinterpreting the concept, "freedom of conscience"—that is, they want to convince me that the legislation on cults doesn't contradict Lenin's decree, but makes it more explicit.

Obviously you can interpret the words "freedom of conscience" differently, but it's a shameful thing for our state, the most democratic in the world, when believers can't meet on May Day and spend it as believers.

The prosecutor was very interested as to whether or not we sang revolutionary songs on May Day. If we'd sung revolutionary songs, we wouldn't have been called up before the authorities.

Isn't that a violation of the Constitution, art. 124, which "guarantees freedom of conscience", and gives us the right to sing religious songs?

A lot's been said about giving material help. The legislation on religion, article 17(b) says: "It is forbidden to render material assistance to other members." I want to tell the court that I don't know of any other state, even the most backward one, where the law demands such a thing—that someone should have the right to control what purposes I can use my honestly-earned money for, and should forbid me to use it to help those in need.

Isn't this point in the legislation a limitation of the freedom of conscience?

In the existing legislation there are points forbidding the activity of circles for children, adolescents, young adults, men and women. But if in our congregation there are young people who want to play instruments, by what international law can you forbid the activity of such circles?

In the legislation there are points limiting the activity of a preacher and of a choir to the area of residence of the congregation in question. This isn't considered a violation of the principle of freedom of conscience. But after all everybody knows that the artists of the Moscow theatre travel not only to different towns, but even to different countries. They aren't restricted in this, let alone called to account for it. If a believer visits another congregation, whether he simply goes as a guest or whether he is in another congregation while on a business trip, or if a choir particularly wants to go to a wedding in some other village, then doesn't the law which forbids this contradict Lenin's decree, article 2?

That point in the legislation where it talks about the right of the official representative to have the presbyter removed, isn't that a violation of Lenin's decree on the separation of church and state? There was a case in our Church: the removal of V.Ye. Logvinenko. Only one reason is known for his removal—the fact that he is a young man; but he's of age, and the Church put its trust in him when they elected him.

Don't all these points, which really restrict freedom of conscience, have one aim in view: to drain all the sap out of believers?

One of the main points of the charge is that according to the existing legislation, any religious society can become active only after registration. Registration is given only on conditions which are contrary to our doctrine. Therefore we as Christians cannot neglect to meet, even though we are deprived of registration.

The charge against us of causing material damage during our celebration of May Day in the plantation is a deliberately-concocted lie. The record of the trees being broken down was put together long after our arrest.

I don't consider the distribution of literature a crime. Instead of giving us freedom to print, you condemn us for this. I did distribute literature and I will continue to do so at the slightest opportunity.

Why are we being tried for breaking the Soviet legislation on religion? The fact that the congregation is unregistered is seen as a crime when Shevchenko and Bondarenko, after being sentenced for precisely the same thing, were rehabilitated while the same legislation was in operation.

The legislation has continued to exist—it's the authorities themselves who are interpreting it differently at different times.

I want to ask the court: when was the mistake made, when they were sentenced, or when they were rehabilitated?

You gave me a great honour when you described me as an organizer. I'm not an organizer, as you accuse me of being. I have friends who are spiritually above me and have worked harder than I. I don't say this because I'm afraid, but because I don't consider myself worthy of such a great honour—to suffer for my Lord.

(Shevchenko asks for postponement of his defence speech, but is deprived of it altogether.)

GRIGORI BORUSHKO'S DEFENCE SPEECH

I consider myself happy to be able to stand before the court, not as a criminal, but as a Christian. I am grateful to you, comrade Judges, for giving those who wanted to be at this trial the opportunity to be convinced of our innocence. And now, dispensing with my legal right to a defence counsel, I shall defend my own case, in the hope that you will graciously hear me out.

Comrade Judges, I am grieved by the fact that the main prosecution witnesses have not been called: Yuleshkin, Shamrai and Kuzmenko. I am beginning to get the impression that the Prosecutor has been absent from court and that our fate has already been decided long ago.

The aim of my defence speech is to demonstrate my innocence of the charges against me, also to show that I am being tried for my religious convictions; to show that the whole indictment did not issue from an actual crime, but was artificially constructed and is the result of an official directive.

The defence is significantly complicated by the fact that witnesses have not been called and therefore the conclusion cannot be a logical one.

Comrade Judges, I was expelled from the medical institute because of my religious convictions. You heard from the witness Moroz's testimony that without having any grievance against me at work, they nevertheless decided at the Party office to dismiss me. And even now in the First Aid section they're threatening me with dismissal. All this is, moreover, a violation of the legislation and if you were to put both our actions in the scales, isn't it obvious that theirs is worse?

And if I'm deprived of freedom, nobody can take away my right to suffer for my Christ.

"Whoever wishes to bear the cross once will be crucified forever . . ."

JUDGE (interrupting). Keep to the point.

The Church lives as long as it suffers. If you look at the history of Christianity, its faithfulness to Christ, Christianity kept its vitality as long as it suffered. And on the other hand, when the Church moved away from the commands of Christ it ceased to suffer.

Comrade Judges, it is in your hands today, in the name of the law, either to justify arbitrary recriminations, or to show all present that there is justice on earth too. Otherwise I say in Lermontov's words: ". . . There remains the judgement of God . . ." That's all I have to say.

VASIL TIMCHAK'S DEFENCE SPEECH

I consider myself fortunate that I am on the defendants' bench today as a Christian, not as a thief or a murderer or as someone who has violated another's property. And I rejoice in this fate which has befallen me for Christ.

As a Christian, I believe in Christ and I preached about Him and will continue to do so in future.

The Prosecutor *was* present in the courtroom and apparently she didn't hear a thing the witnesses said—she read out something that had been decided on and written down already and didn't make a single extract from the witnesses' testimonies.

I'm charged with being a preacher. Yes, I am a preacher and preaching the Word of God isn't a crime before the law.

I'm charged with participating in activity intended to stir up disobedience to the legislation on religion. This wasn't confirmed by any of the witnesses. Nobody said that I appealed to people not to obey the legislation on religion. We don't preach about state legislation at our divine services, we preach the Word of God which says that all people should repent and accept the Kingdom of God. I preached this Kingdom of God and the witnesses confirmed that. In my sermons I spoke about the love of God, how Christ loved man even to the death on the cross, so that everyone who believes in Him might have eternal life. That's what I preached, what I still preach and will continue to preach.

Everything the Prosecutor says is untrue; we have the right to write to our government; it isn't a crime for us to write a declaration to the government.

In Moscow a declaration was written to Brezhnev to the effect that we had elected the Council of Churches and asked for recognition of it, and that it should not be hindered in the work for which we had elected it. This request of ours had nothing to do with non-recognition of the legislation.

I'm charged with being at a conference of the Odessa, Kherson and Nikolaevsk regions. Yes, I was there, and we were deciding Church matters. We also wrote a declaration to the government, requesting that they recognize our brethren from the Council of Churches. There wasn't any infringement of the rights of citizens in it. As for the congress, we are still asking for it to be allowed under the leadership of its initiators, although we get no reply.

The March law of 1966,* consolidating Art. 138, part II, has no retrospective power over those things which were done before it was promulgated. But you are charging us concerning a conference which took place in 1965.

The prosecutor has said that we completely reject the legislation. That isn't true; I disagree only with a few points. I didn't influence believers against obeying the legislation on cults, this accusation wasn't confirmed by the witnesses and I deny it. I preached Christ crucified.

The prosecutor said that the celebration on 2 May 1966 was organized under my leadership. Not one of the witnesses confirmed this. How could I have organized it when I wasn't there? I went away to the country about that time.

YA. N. KRIVOI'S DEFENCE SPEECH

"The sun of righteousness will arise with healing in his wings," said the prophet, and the folk proverb says, "Truth is like the sun, you can't cover it up with your hand." I believe in truth, but "Faith is the substance of things hoped for."

20 years ago I was sentenced to 10 years' imprisonment for the same crimes for which I am now standing before the court. Along with me, many were sentenced to 25 years, and some to the supreme punishment.

*Tightening up on the production of religious literature and public acts of witness, as well as being even more specific than before on the outlawing of Sunday Schools.

During that term I worked hard and built two brickworks, for which they let me out ten months early. During my imprisonment and after it the workers and management agitated for us and, as I learned later, truth triumphed and after 20 years I was rehabilitated. And those who were sentenced to 25 years and those who didn't return from prison were also rehabilitated, the latter posthumously.

And now, too, you know perfectly well that I've done no harm to society or to the state.

You are entrusted, comrade Judges, with the fate of a human being.

I'm charged with organizing activity directed against recognition of the Soviet legislation on religion. Nobody confirmed this. I admit that I disagree with some points of the legislation which deprive believers of freedom of conscience.

We have a law about freedom of conscience, and it's forbidden to intrude on another's conscience according to these laws. Our Council of Twenty, which you call a "guiding body," of which I too was a member, lost all power after we were refused registration.

Yes, I was at the conference in Kiev, but there was nothing illegal in the appeal that we adopted there, it was of a purely religious character. We met for a considerable time, and we didn't write to the government until we were disturbed, but the prosecutor states that you don't interfere in our questions of dogma. The election of a pastor is for us a matter of dogma. Nobody should interfere in this. We aren't against control, that's why we always wrote that we live quietly and meet together, and asked to be registered.

I'm charged with distributing appeals among citizens, but which one of them confirmed this?

As for preaching, it's not only Church leaders who can take part in this, but also ordinary members. I'm a preacher and I don't deny it.

I'm charged with organizing the celebration of 2nd May when I wasn't there, because I was doing some plastering for a Christian brother.

The whole trial has confirmed the falsity of the charges against me.

On the basis of the laws of our state I have committed no crime either against society or against the state. But if I suffer as a Christian, I'm ready to wear handcuffs. I've been a believer for 40 years and you can't re-educate me whatever you do, and you won't break me with any threats.

V. I. ALEXEEVA'S DEFENSE SPEECH

I thank the Lord that on this my spiritual birthday I have been counted worthy to sit on the defendants' bench.

Comrade Judges, if faith in God has brought me happiness and my heart is overflowing with Him, do you really think I wouldn't tell people? Even the Constitution grants freedom of conscience. So I told everybody who wanted to listen to me that Christ loves every sinner and that the Lord says today: "Do I desire the death of a sinner, and not that he should turn to me and live?"

As for the distribution of literature, I want to say that when this trial is over it will be published in the paper, and we too have the right to write to the government and to our friends in the Church.

For example, I distributed the "Kiev Declaration" which reports certain unjust incidents. If these had not occurred, there wouldn't have been any declaration either.

Secondly, when the article "Prophets and Victims" came out, filled with slander and unjust accusations against the believers Kryuchkov and Vins, the mother of one of them, who was well acquainted with her son's life and had followed it carefully, wrote a declaration to the government in which she refuted the injustice of this article. That was the reason for that letter. Our declarations concern only our Christian life.

I'm charged with going to Moscow, where I was a delegate from the congregation at Peresyp. We're Soviet citizens and every year we cast our votes for those who are to guard our constitutional rights and we have the right to turn to them with our declarations.

For our part we render unto Caesar what is Caesar's and unto God what is God's.

Comrade Judges, you charge me with organizing the distribution of literature and with inciting believers not to obey the legislation on cults. In the course of this trial all these charges have been refuted. The Council and all the congregations that support it, including ours. I consider to be legal, since we have appealed to the authorities many times and still do with requests for registration. But up to now our declarations have been ignored.

Our methods and our actions are open for all to see. The Word of God says: "The way of the just is uprightness" (Is. 26:27).

Pascal said: "Woe to those who do not know their life's aim." Our aim in life is to fulfil the commands of Christ. The first commandment is: "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God" and the second: "Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself". If we fulfil these commandments, we don't break state laws in so doing; on the contrary, wherever we can we try to help and give good advice. In the Holy Scriptures it says: "There is no other name under heaven by which men may be saved except the name of Jesus Christ".

N. P. SHEVCHENKO'S FINAL ADDRESS

In 1962 I was sentenced to 4 years imprisonment and 3 years exile for not obeying the "Letter of Instructions" and the Baptist Statutes, for making my home available for prayer meetings, for baptizing believers.

I served 2 years and 7 months in prison, after which I was rehabilitated for lack of criminal evidence. I was re-instated at work and paid a pension for the time in prison.

After my release I worked for 4 months and because I went to Moscow with an appeal to the government I was again suspended from work.

Was anyone responsible for all this?

I stand again before a court, accused of the same thing.

You charge us with slander of the press. I won't touch on the article "Prophets and Victims" in the central paper *Izvestia*—Solovyova has already talked about that; but I want to mention our local paper, *Chernomorskaya Kommuna*, which carried an article saying that believers in the village of Usatovo, Odessa Region, burnt down a house and an old woman in it, as if to say that they made a ritual sacrifice of her. Anyone who wants to look into it can find out for himself that this is a lie, everybody in Usatovo knows the believers.

I was born and brought up in that village, I know everybody there—there isn't even an old woman of that name.

Even now I can't understand how they could pass something like that in a newspaper—to write about something absolutely fictitious. It's just done to arouse popular hatred against believers.

I have no doubt that you're capable of writing a slanderous article about us, too.

JUDGE. That has nothing to do with the case—keep to the point.

SHEVCHENKO. What do you mean, it has nothing to do with the case, when we're accused of slandering the press?—the fact is it's the other way round: you write slanders about believers.

JUDGE. (interrupts) . . .

SHEVCHENKO. I accept this imprisonment with joy, as did the apostle Peter; when they wanted to crucify him he said, I'm not worthy to be crucified like my Teacher, Christ—crucify me upside down" . . .

JUDGE. (interrupts) . . .

SHEVCHENKO. Comrade Judges, I'm not asking you for mercy, but the fate of many people is in your hands, you are expected to judge justly. When King Solomon was entrusted with the judging of the people, he asked the Lord for wisdom.

JUDGE. (interrupting) We're not interested in Solomon.

SHEVCHENKO. "Be wise now therefore, O ye kings; be instructed, ye judges of the earth" (Ps. 2:10).

JUDGE. Sit down, Shevchenko.

G. G. BORUSHKOS' FINAL ADDRESS

I came to Odessa when I was 18. By 1958 I had done two years of higher education and I decided to enter the Medical Institute, but since you had to have three years behind you for this, I decided to try and get into the State University. I went there as a production worker in biological faculty.

And it was there, while I was studying science, that the question of religion came to me in a completely different light. I realised that the greatest scientists, the pillars of science, like Kepler, the discoverer of the laws of planet motion, Newton, discoverer of natural laws relating to the earth, the naturalist Linnaeus, who gave us the classification of the whole animal and plant world, the mathematician Euclid, physician and mathematician Pascal, our first Russian universalist Mikhail Lomonosov, Copernicus, and in our own time, Filatov, Voino-

Yasenetsky and others, had been men of profound religious faith. Therefore I decided to find out myself a definitive answer to the question: does God exist or not—that is, should I be a believer or not? At that time I read the Bible a lot and I came through strong doubts to faith in God. My atheism and unbelief were based on an ignorance of the Bible. I particularly liked the Gospels.

But however strange it may seem, it was just at that time that I went through a most intense inner struggle and uncertainty. I looked at the Bible . . . it was through not knowing it that people didn't believe. I remember during a conversation in the institute, the Vice-Dean said to me: "The Bible says the world stands on three whales". I asked her: "Did you read that yourself?" and she was uncomfortable because she was a scientist but she'd never read the book that so much has been spoken about in every century, the book that people base their lives on, and for which they will give their lives. (The judge interrupts: "Don't start making propaganda").

Well, I liked the Gospels, but I couldn't find in myself the strength to live them out until I realised that to do this you had to be born again, that is, to accept Jesus Christ in your heart—and I turned to Him.

"With His holy freedom
He took the chains from the soul, torments from the heart,
And stains from the guilty conscience" . . .

At that time occurred the first persecutions, but this was according to Christ's words; it ended with my being expelled from the institute, but I had already decided on this path:

Whoever wants to bear the cross once
Will be crucified forever,
And whether there is happiness in life
He will be happy in eternity.

You are appointing us to suffer, but in fact this is preordained by God, for not a hair of our head falls to the ground without His will.

Suffering is Christianity's vital nerve. The Church is alive as long as it suffers, for Christ suffered and called us to do likewise.

I'm an optimist—in other words I believe that if things are bad today, they'll be better tomorrow; if they sentence you today, they'll acquit you tomorrow; if injustices meet you on earth today, tomorrow there'll be justice.

Such a dialectic, if it isn't confirmed on earth, will still triumph in heaven, as it's written: "According to the promise we wait for a new earth and a new heaven in which righteousness dwells."

JUDGE: Borushko, have you any more quotations?

BORUSHKO: Yes I have.

"I want to walk in such a way
That my weary brother
Should hear the rhythm of my steps
And be shaken out of his slumber and inspired
To step out more quickly towards the sacred vision.
That my step should convince the unfaithful
Of the holy, blessed truth,
And that day by day the ranks of warriors
On the way to the goal should be filled with brothers
Whom God's Spirit has awakened to life.
I want to walk so that the children of paradise,
The angels in heaven, should draw men's hearts
And in joyful praise, blessing my path,
Should sing a hymn to the Saviour of the world.
Their praise is poured out at God's throne
Poured out unchanging in sacred harmonics.
In its precious beauty
It has drawn so many sinners to God.
And today the angel choir is not silent . . .
When history's course is run,
To Him who went His way without turning back
Will sound their hundredfold hymn of praise."

V. T. TIMCHAK'S FINAL ADDRESS

I've been a Christian since childhood. My mother brought me up as a Christian from my early childhood, and I am before you today on the defendants' bench as a Christian. Yes, I believe in God, and the Word of God says that it is given to

us not only to believe in Him but also to suffer for Christ. I am happy that I have the chance to carry out these words of Christ, one thing I know—He will never leave me. Christ Himself bore sufferings and has never left His followers who have trodden the same path. And I rejoice in this lot—to suffer for Christ. Many of my brothers have been unjustly sentenced and later rehabilitated and I know that you are trying us today, but tomorrow we will be rehabilitated, for lack of criminal proof. Then those who today are asking for these terms of imprisonment will be ashamed.

Many of our brethren have already gone the way of suffering in faithfulness to our Lord, but the Word of God says: "Regarding their end, imitate their faith".

And now today you are separating us from our relatives and loved ones, but I believe that we will meet again on earth, and in eternity we will receive for all our sufferings a joy that will have no end, when we meet our Saviour.

V. M. ZABORSKY'S FINAL ADDRESS

Before I came of age, I decided to leave home so as not to hear about God. I signed up and went to Novosibirsk. They didn't want to take me, but I persuaded the official. They understood my circumstances and did it as a favour.

In a worldly atmosphere I learned to swear like a trooper.

I was soon called up. There among my friends I was the most active composer and teller of dirty stories and I always found a circle of friends to listen. Nobody could beat me at it. I didn't drink wine or vodka there, I only drank some stuff that had a skull and crossbones on the bottle—it's called methylated spirits. I was summoned before a military tribunal to explain my way of life.

It was there, walking on the bank of the Amur, that I remembered the words of my mother: "Son, when you get into trouble, remember God". And then I took off my soldiers' cap and said: "Lord, if you save me from this trial, then from this moment on I'll be your preacher". And it all worked out. There was a complete change in my life. I became a new man, people began to be grateful to me. I was put in charge of a group, but without any rank. Then the men began to get interested in me, when they saw that I no longer joined with them in their former bad ways; I was summoned by the officers, from the lowest to the highest. The commander summoned me and after some inconclusive conversation, he suggested: "If you deny God, we'll give you rank, you'll get more money".

"I've got a rank higher than commander of a regiment".

"What's that?"

"As a Christian," I answered.

Soon they summoned me again and said:

"You know that your faith is a relic of capitalism?"

"You're wrong about that. Our faith existed under Nero and the Roman Empire before capitalism came, it's existed under capitalism, it exists under socialism and, if God wills, it'll exist under communism".

They asked me to go, and when I was summoned again they said:

"You know, Zaborsky, that spies conceal themselves under the mask of your faith?"

"I can't argue about that, because I've never heard such a thing before—but practical experience has shown that spies can get through the Party net, but not through the religious one—Beria for example, and Penkovsky."

A bit later the commanding officer summoned me and said:

"Listen, Zaborsky. We had a soldier once who wore a cross round his neck. We had a talk with him and he took it off, put it on the table and said: 'Give me a *Komsomol* card'."

I'd do that too, but my God isn't on a crucifix, but in my heart. I can't put Him on the table—to do that I'd have to tear out my heart, in other words stop living, which is impossible. Later I was demoted to be a reservist. The deputy political officer said:

"Well, Zaborsky, off you go now with your God."

"Exactly, comrade major."

"Goodbye, you block-headed Baptist, just go on the way you are doing".

Then I came to Odessa, I was baptized and became a member of the Peresyp Church. I went to the meetings at the prayer house for two years, but after it was closed I and my brothers and sisters met during the cold winter of 1958 outside the wall of the closed prayer house. When our prayer house was given to the poultry farm to use, we tried to meet in flats. That's what we've done up

to now. It was only in the summer of 1966 that I found out about the existence of the Soviet legislation on religion, which prohibits Gospel teaching and Lenin's decree. On the basis of this legislation the "Statute" and the "Letter of Instructions" were issued back in 1960, which led to the great and visible schism in the Church. Believers were in such a situation that they had to violate something—either man's or God's law.

(The judge interrupts). It is precisely for this reason that I stand before the court today, as a Christian.

We will not kneel to it".

Judge: (to the police) Please restore order.

(Three policemen quickly go up to Valya and make her sit down).

SENTENCE

SHEVCHENKO, Nikolai Pavlovich,
BORUSHKO, Grigori Grigorievich,
KRIVOL, Yakov Nikiforovich,
SOLOVYOVA, Svetlana Pavlovna,
ALEKSEVA, Valentina Ivanovna
sentenced to 3 years' imprisonment in ordinary regime camps.
TIMCHAK, Vasili Terentievich
ZABORSKY, Viktor Mikhailovich
sentenced to 1 year's imprisonment in ordinary regime camps.

PERSECUTION OF THE JEWS

REPRESSION OF JEWS IN THE SOVIET UNION

(Edited by Louis Rosenblum, Union of Councils for Soviet Jews)

INTRODUCTION

The Jewish minority in the USSR is subjected to singularly repressive treatment. Special prohibitions are placed upon Jewish education, religious observance, and culture. Discrimination is practiced against Jews in employment and schooling. Anti-Semitism is inflamed by a stream of news articles, books, and cartoons from the government press. As a consequence, an estimated 1/4 million Jews have sought permission to leave the Soviet Union. Most desire to reunite with families in Israel.

All but a small number of the applications have been denied, in spite of the fact that the demands to emigrate are legitimate and in keeping with Soviet Constitution, law, practice, and international treaty. The record shows that the Soviet government has allowed the reunion of families and has indeed supported the repatriation of entire ethnic groups living in the USSR, e.g., several thousand Spaniards, 1956-60 and 200,000 Poles, 1957-8. Additionally, the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet on January 22, 1969 ratified the International Convention on the Elimination of Racial Discrimination. Article 5, paragraph d, subsection 2 of the Convention provides that each contracting party to the treaty "guarantees the right of everyone to leave any country, including his own, and to return to his country."

To check the growing 'exodus' movement the Soviet government has resorted to three major stratagems: 'silence' vocal dissidents by letting them leave; discourage application for emigration by intensifying the financial and procedural requirements; and repress Jewish national feeling by arrest of persons possessing Jewish history or Hebrew language books on criminal charges of anti-Soviet activities.

The present wave of repression began with the arrest of Boris Kochubievsky in Dec. 1968 and his trial in May 1969. Following this came the secret trial in Riazan, Feb. 1970, the infamous Leningrad hi-jacking trial of Dec. 1970, and the recent trials in Riga, Leningrad, Kishinev, Odessa, Sverdlovsk, Kharkov, and Chernovitz. In general, those arrested have been charged with "political crimes" under RSFSR Criminal Code Statute 70 (anti-Soviet propaganda) and Statute 72 (anti-Soviet organization). In addition, defendants in the Leningrad hi-jacking trial were charged with treason and theft of government property. Sentences up to 15 years in *strict* or *special* regime labor camps were meted out.

STRICT REGIME

"they condemn you to an empty belly"

Reproduced below is a brief sketch of the strict regime from *My Testimony*, E. P. Dutton and Co., New York, 1969, pp. 224-7.

"Well, and what about a prisoner's rights? There is his right to correspond (with limitations and censorship). His right to have visits from relatives. His right to buy up to five rubles' worth of food in the camp shop, though only with money earned inside the camp. If he has nothing left after deductions have been made—too bad, he can make do without, even if his relatives are prepared to send money. Not on sale in the camp shop and forbidden because of the regime regulations are: sugar, butter, tinned meat and fish, bread. All you can buy is tinned vegetables or fruit (hardly anybody buys these because they are too dear, they take your whole five rubles), cheap tobacco, toothbrushes, envelopes, notebooks, and you can buy camp clothing if you like—not that anybody does on five rubles a month.

"But these rights are no better than a dream, a mirage. Admin [the camp authorities] has the right to deprive a prisoner of all of them. This is done for violations, and who can say that he commits no violations—if Admin wants to

find some? And so they take away your rights—to the shop for instance, for a month, two months, three. And then you have to get by on “basic”—on camp rations that have been worked out on scientific principles to be just enough to keep you from dying off.

“The daily norm is 2,400 calories: 25 ozs. of bread, 3 ozs. of cod, 2 ozs. of meat (the sheepdog guarding the cons gets 1 lb.), 1 lb. of vegetable—potatoes and cabbage, about 1 oz. of meal or noodles, $\frac{3}{4}$ oz. of fat and $\frac{1}{2}$ oz. of sugar. And that’s all. It adds up to one and a half times less than a normal man needs on light work. You will say: what about the shop? But then they deprive you of the shop? Keeping strictly to all the rules and regulations they condemn you to an empty belly!

“But anyway, not even all of this finds its way into the prisoner’s bowl. A cart, for instance, comes into the compound carrying meat for the whole camp, 300 lbs. for three thousand men. You look at this meat and you hardly know what to think: is it carrion, or something still worse? All blue, it seems to consist entirely of bone and gristle. Then it goes to be stewed and you’re lucky if half an ounce finds its way into your mouth.

You are eating cabbage and you can’t make out to begin with what it is: some sort of black, slimy, stinking globs. How much out of the established quota gets thrown on the rubbish heap? And in spring and summer the cookhouse hands can’t even bring themselves to throw out the bad potatoes any more, otherwise there would be nothing to put in the soup. And so they throw in the black and rotten ones. If you go near the cookhouse in summer the stench turns you over. Stinking cod, rotten cabbage. The bread is like we had in the war. In number seven we had a bakery in which we baked two kinds of bread, black for camp, white for outside. Sugar, though you would think was foolproof. It won’t rot, you don’t have to measure it. But then they give it to you damp so that it weighs more. And they give you ten days’ ration at a time—5 ozs.—because if they give you your 1 oz. daily, it wouldn’t be a question of having nothing to eat as of nothing to see.

“During six years in camp and jail I had bread with butter twice—when I received visits. I also ate two cucumbers—one in 1964 and another in 1966. Not once did I eat a tomato or an apple. All this was forbidden . . .

“And that is what strict regime looks like today. Strict regime, for the most part, is for political prisoners, because among criminals only the persistent offenders get put on strict regime, or those who commit a crime or a violation already in the camps, and even then not for their whole term—they do a stint on strict regime and then go back to normal regime again. For criminals and civil prisoners strict regime is the harshest form of punishment. But for us politicals it is the mildest, our imprisonment begins with this, because it is the minimum awarded by the courts. From strict regime political prisoners can go only to special regime or to the clink. And that is even worse.”

PRISONERS OF CONSCIENCE

Presently, more than 40 victims of show trials, staged to repress the growth of Jewish national feeling, are serving sentences in strict and special regime labor camps. Many of these unfortunate people are in need of medical care for serious ailments. All are in physically weak condition as a result of the extended interrogation and imprisonment between the time of their arrest and trial and as a result of the semi-starvation diet in the labor camps.

Brief sketches of several of these prisoners of conscience follow.

[Photographs appear on p. 280.]

PRISONERS OF CONSCIENCE

Name	Born	From	Status	Occupation	Arrested	Trial	Sentence (strict regime unless otherwise noted)
Kechubevsky, Boris	1936	Kiev	Married (1)	Engineer	December 1958	May 16, 1969	3 years.
Gutman, Lilia	1937	Chernovitz	do	do	Jan. 8, 1970	do	2 1/2 years.
Dzhindzhikhashvili, Avraham	1941	Tbilisi	do	do	June 1970	do	do
Dzhanashvili, Benjamin	1923	do	do	do	do	do	do
Vudka, Yuri I	1947	Riazan	Student	Student	August 1969	Feb. 10-19, 1970	7 years.
Galius, Shymoon I	1945	Klaipeda	Engineer	Engineer	do	do	5 years.
Vudka, Valeri	1950	Riazan	Student	Student	do	do	3 years.
Frolov, Oleg Mark	1927	Leningrad	do	Pilot	June 15, 1970	do	5 years.
Dymshits, Mark	1942	Riga	Married	Engraver	do	do	Death, commuted to 15 years.
Altman, Anatoly	1948	do	Bachelor	Student	do	do	12 years, reduced to 10 years.
Zaimanson, Izrael	1939	do	do	Student	do	do	8 years.
Zaimanson, Wolf	1944	do	Married	Officer, engineer	do	Jan. 7, 1971	10 years.
Minokhi, Leib	1947	do	Married	do	do	Dec. 15, 1970	13 years, reduced to 10 years.
Mendelovich, Iosif ¹	1946	do	Bachelor	Student	do	do	15 years, reduced to 12 years.
Penson, Boris	1946	do	do	Artist	do	do	10 years.
Zaimanson, Sylvia I	1944	do	Married	Engineer	do	do	Do.
Kuznetsov, Eduard I	1941	do	do	Interpreter	do	do	Death, commuted to 15 years, special regime.
Fedorov, Yuri I	1944	do	do	Worker	do	do	15 years, special regime.
Murzenko, Aleksey I	1943	do	do	do	do	do	14 years, special regime.
Mogilever, Vladimir	1940	Leningrad	Married (1)	Engineer	do	Mar. 11, 1971	4 years.
Kaminsky, Lassa	1930	do	Married (2)	do	do	do	5 years.
Chernoglaz, David	1940	do	Married (1)	Agronomist	do	June 21, 1971	Do.
Baltman, Hillel	1923	do	do	do	do	May 11, 1971	10 years.
Nornbir, Lev	1922	do	do	Machinician	do	do	3 years.
Yagman, Lev	1940	do	do	Engineer	do	do	5 years.
Drazner, Solomon	1932	do	Married (2)	do	do	do	3 years.
Goldfeld, Anatoly	1946	do	Bachelor	do	do	do	4 years.
Rogoslavsky, Viktor	1940	do	do	do	do	June 21, 1971	3 years.
Bounya, Mendel	1937	Riga	Married	Worker	do	May 11, 1971	4 years.
Galperin, Aleksander	1946	Kishinev	do	do	7, 1970	Dec. 15, 1970	4 years.
Martser, Boris	1947	Riga	Married	Engineer	July 24, 1970	June 21, 1971	2 1/2 years.
Shpilberg, Arkady	1938	do	Married	do	Aug. 4, 1970	Mar. 24, 1971	1 year.
Shur, Hillel	1936	Leningrad	Married (2)	Engineer	do	do	3 years.
Krishner, Harry	1946	Kishinev	do	do	Aug. 5, 1970	June 21, 1971	2 years.
Volashin, Arkady	1947	do	do	do	August 1970	do	Do.
Rabinovich, David	1947	do	do	Technician	do	do	Do.
Trakhtenberg, Avraham	1947	do	do	do	do	do	1 year.
Aleksandrovich, Rutin I	1937	Riga	Married	Nurse	Oct. 7, 1970	Feb. 21, 1971	2 years.
Shephelovich, Mikhail	1943	do	Bachelor	Worker	Oct. 16, 1970	May 24, 1971	1 year.
Shtilbans, Viktor	1947	Leningrad	do	Physician	November 1970	do	2 years.
Kornblit, Mikhael	1937	do	do	Stomatologist	do	May 11, 1971	1 year.
Borisov, Igor	1942	do	Married	do	do	do	7 years.
Levit, Semyon	1947	Kishinev	do	Physicist	Nov. 17, 1970	Dec. 23, 1970	do
Palatnik, Raiza I	1936	Doessa	do	Librarian	December 1970	June 21, 1971	2 years.
Renert, Khaim	1921	Chernovits	do	Physician	March 1971	June 22, 1971	Do.
Kukui, Valeri	1938	Sverdlovsk	Married (1)	Engineer	do	June 15, 1971	5 years.

¹ Sketch of prisoner presented herein.

ALEXANDROVICH, RUTA ISAACOVNA

Twenty-three years old, born in Latvia, Jewish, student nurse, single. Applied on several occasions with her father, mother, and younger brother for repatriation to Israel. Repeatedly refused. Arrested October 7, 1970, Riga. Charged in accordance with Latvian SSR Statute 65 (RSFSR equivalent—Statute 70) anti-Soviet propaganda. Sentenced May 27, 1971, to one year strict regime. She is due for release in October, 1971. [Now released in Israel]

According to Dr. V. Portnoy, the prisoner's former personal physician presently residing at Ulpian Etsim, Jerusalem, Israel, Miss Alexandrovich suffers from an asthmatic condition and "exacerbation of chronic pyelonephritis."

The latest information on Miss Alexandrovich is as of the last week in July. Her father Isaac Alexandrovich visited Ruth in the camp. He said that Ruth and Sylvia Zalmanson are in the same barracks and both girls work in a factory making canvas gloves with fur lining. But since neither can produce the high production "norm" required, they receive only one-half the food ration. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Yavas, Uchrezdenie JK X 385.

Relatives: Isaac Alexandrovich, father, Riga, Latvian SSR, USSR Suvorova 16, Kv. 120.

Rivka Alexandrovich, mother, Ein Tzurim 201-3 Talpiot, Jerusalem, Israel.

FEDOROV, YURY PAVLOVICH

Twenty-seven years old, Russian. Convicted and sentenced when he was 17 years old for anti-Soviet views. After his prison sentence his health was poor. He was kept under surveillance by the KGB (secret police) which made him extremely nervous and fearful. Arrested with eleven others in connection with alleged "hi-jacking" attempt in Leningrad, charged in accordance with RSFSR Statutes 64-15 (treason—to flee abroad) and 93-15 (theft of government property). Sentenced to 15 years special regime, without confiscation of property, in absence of such. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Yavas, Uchrezdenie JK X 385/10.

Relative: N. V. Buzyreva, wife, Moscow, USSR, Serfinisovicha 2, Kv. 167.

GRILLUS, SIMONAS ARONOVICH

Twenty-six years old, Jewish. Engineer, worked on ship repairs in the Lithuanian harbor town of Klaipeda. He was arrested in August, 1969, after a search of his apartment revealed the possession of books for studying Hebrew and records of Hebrew songs. Charged in accordance with RSFSR Statute 70 (anti-Soviet propaganda) and Statute 72 (anti-Soviet organization). Tried by a secret tribunal. Sentenced February 19, 1970, to five years strict regime.

Earlier this year Grillus was deprived of the right to receive parcels and was put into solitary confinement for 15 days for refusing to take off his *kipa* (skull cap) on Saturdays and other religious holidays. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Lesnoy, Uchrezdenie JK X 385/19-1.

KHNOKH, LEIB GIRSHEVICH

Born in 1944 in Insar, Mordovskaja ASSR, Jewish. After the war moved to Varaklyany, Latvian SSR. After completing seven years at school, entered the Railway Technical Institute in Daugavpils. Worked as an electrician. In 1965 was called up to the Army but a few months later was declared unfit for military service because of a chronic dislocation of the shoulder. In 1969 he requested permission to leave for Israel but was refused. Married Mary Mendeleovich in 1970. Repeatedly signed individual and group appeals to various Soviet and foreign organizations requesting help in leaving for Israel. Arrested with eleven others June 15, 1970, in connection with alleged "hi-jacking" attempt in Leningrad. Charged in accordance with RSFSR Statutes 64-15 (treason—to flee abroad), 93-15 (theft of government property) and Statutes 70 and 72 (anti-Soviet acts). Sentenced on December 25, 1970, to 13 years strict regime without confiscation of property, in absence of such. Reduced on December 30, 1970, by the Supreme Court of the RSFSR to 10 years strict regime. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Oziorny, Uchrezdenie JK X 385/17.

Relatives: P. B. Khnokh, brother, Daugavpils, Latvian SSR, USSR Virsku 48, Kv. 100.

KUZNETSOV, EDUARD SAMUILOVICH

Twenty-nine years old, born of a Russian mother and a Jewish father, his internal passport states he is Russian but he considers himself to be a Jew. Studied at the philosophy faculty of Moscow University. Spent seven years in prison on charge of anti-Soviet activities. Deprived of right to live in Moscow, Leningrad, and other large cities. Became aware of being a Jew while in prison and talked about his dream to live in a Jewish state. Worked as an English-Russian interpreter in the Riga psychiatric hospital. Married Sylva Zalmanson in 1970. Arrested with eleven others in connection with alleged "hi-jacking" attempt in Leningrad, charged in accordance with RSFSR Statutes 64-15 (treason—to flee abroad) and 93-15 (theft of government property) and Statutes 70 and 72 (anti-Soviet activities). Sentenced to death, without confiscation of property, in the absence of such. Commuted on December 30, 1970, by the Supreme Court of the RSFSR to 12 years strict regime. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Yavas, Uchrezdenie ЖХХ 385/10.

MENDELEVICH, IOSIF MOZUSOVICH

Born in 1947, Jewish. His father sells newspapers. His mother died tragically in 1969[?]. After graduating from school in 1965, entered the Riga Polytechnic. In 1968, applied together with his relatives to leave for Israel, but was refused. In 1969 left the Institute, considering that his being a student there could be an obstacle to the granting of permission to leave for Israel. In 1970, requested permission and was again refused. He has signed various appeals to Soviet and foreign organizations for permission to leave for Israel. In 1970, two weeks after receiving a *Kharakteristika*, a character reference, for the OVIR (Office of Visas and Registration), he was dismissed from work under the pretext of redundancy. Arrested with eleven others June 15, 1970, in connection with alleged "hijacking" attempt in Leningrad, charged in accordance with RSFSR Statutes 64-15 (treason—to flee abroad), 93-15 (theft of government property) and Statutes 70 and 72 (anti-Soviet acts). Sentenced December 25, 1970 to 15 years strict regime, without confiscation of property, in the absence of such. Reduced on December 30, 1970, by the Supreme Court of the RSFSR to 12 years strict regime. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Oziorny, Uchrezdenie ЖХХ 385/17a.

Relatives: M. A. Mendelevich, father and E. M. Mendelevich, sister Riga, Latvian SSR, USSR, Kirova 18, Kv. 3

MURZHENKO, ALEKSEY

Twenty-eight years old, Ukrainian. Convicted at age 19 for anti-Stalin utterances and served 6 years in a prison camp for political prisoners. Has command of five languages. Twice after he served his term of imprisonment he tried to enter an institute of higher education but both times he was not admitted although he passed a competitive exam. He was told that with his past he 'cannot count on becoming a translator.' Recently Murzhenko worked in a factory at Lozovaya station and was elected chairman of the local trade union committee. Arrested with eleven others in connection with alleged "hi-jacking" attempt in Leningrad, charged in accordance with RSFSR Statutes 64-15 (treason—to flee abroad) and 93-15 (theft of government property). Sentenced to 14 years special regime, without confiscation of property, none being owned. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Yavas, Uchrezdenie ЖХХ 385/10.

PALATNIK, RAIZA ANATOLYEVNA

Age 35, Jewish, worked in Odessa as a librarian. Shortly after she had written to Israel requesting that her relatives there be located, a search of her apartment was made on October 14, 1970, by the KGB (secret police), and followed by a 4-hour interrogation on October 15. Interrogation and searches continued until her arrest on December 1. Charged under paragraph 187/1 Ukrainian Criminal Code with slandering the Soviet Union. Sentenced June 24, 1971 to two years.

In August 1971, Yekaterina Palatnik, Raiza Palatnik's sister, sent a letter to the International Red Cross and to the Red Cross of Russia describing the deterioration of Raiza's health and asking them to intercede.

"A short while ago when I visited my sister in prison I was shocked that the state of Raiza's health is now worse than it was before her detention. In July

Raiza had a heart attack that left her left hand paralyzed. She had become very thin from undernourishment. It is stifling and hot in her cell and the sanitary conditions are very difficult. Raiza is very ill now as a result of 8 months detention under difficult conditions. Before she was sent to prison she was healthy. Please use your influence on the prison authorities in Odessa to improve the nourishment given to Raiza and her living conditions."

The latest address available is an Odessa prison. Odessa, Ukrainian SSR, USSR, GSP 514 PYA YUG 311/192.

Relative: Sister, Katia Palatnik, Odessa, Ukrainian SSR, USSR, Yakir 23, Kv. 3. [Raiza Palatnik arrived in Israel in December 1972.]

PENSON, BORIS

Aged about 25, Jewish, worked in Riga as an artist in advertising. Did a great deal of painting independently, has a series of works which have never been exhibited because he is not a member of the Union of Artists. In 1969 requested permission to leave for Israel with his relatives (elderly parents) but permission was refused. Arrested with eleven others on June 15, 1970 in connection with alleged "hi-jacking" attempt in Leningrad. Charged in accordance with RSFSR statutes 64-15 (treason—to flee abroad) and 93-15 (theft of government property). Sentenced December 25, 1970 to ten years strict regime with confiscation of property, i.e. his paintings. He is presently in a labor camp for political prisoners in the Potma area. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Lesnoy, Uchrezdenie X X 385/19-2.

VUDKA, YURY Z.

Twenty-four years old, Jewish. Student at Riazan Institute of Radio Technology. Applied to emigrate to Israel. Arrested in August, 1969. Charged in accordance with RSFSR Statute 70 (anti-Soviet propaganda) and Statute 72 (anti-Soviet organization). Tried by a secret tribunal. Sentenced February 19, 1970, to 7 years strict regime. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Lesnoy, Uchrezdenie X X 385/19-1.

ZALMANSON, VOLF IOSIFOVICH

Born November 2, 1939 in Riga, Jewish. In 1962 graduated from the Riga Agricultural Academy, becoming a mechanical engineer. Worked as such in Riga up to 1968. Called up into the Army in 1968: this was an obstacle in his application to leave for Israel. Served as a lieutenant in Kaunas, Lithuanian SSR. Arrested with eleven others on June 15, 1970, in connection with alleged "hi-jacking" attempt in Leningrad. Tried separately by a military court under articles of the criminal code covering treason by flight abroad, theft of state property, and military desertion. Sentenced January 8, 1971 to ten years strict regime. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Uchrezdenia X X 385.

Relatives: I. V. Zalmanson, father and Z. I. Zalmanson, brother, Riga, Latvian SSR, USSR, Veidenbaum 45, Kv. 22.

ZALMANSON, SYLVIA IOSIFOVNA

Born October 25, 1944 in Siberia, Jewish. In 1968 graduated from the Riga Polytechnical Institute, becoming a mechanical engineer. Worked as a designer at the "Sarkana Zvaigzne" factory in Riga. In 1968 tried in vain to obtain permission to leave for Israel. Appealed to Soviet and foreign organizations. In 1970 married Kuznetsov, Eduard Samuilovitch. In 1970, was deprived of the possibility to appeal again for permission to leave for Israel as the management of her factory refused to give her a personal reference.

Arrested with eleven others on June 15, 1970, in connection with alleged "hi-jacking" attempt in Leningrad. Charged in accordance with RSFSR Statutes 64-15 (treason—to flee abroad), 93-15 (theft of government property), 70 (anti-Soviet propaganda), and 72 (anti-Soviet organization). Sentenced December 25, 1970, to ten years strict regime without confiscation of property, in absence of such.

Sylvia has suffered a severe loss of hearing in prison and is likely to go deaf. Her general physical condition is very poor. See letter from her uncle, reproduced below. Address: Mordovskaja ASSR, USSR, St. Potma, Posiolok Yavas, Uchrezdenie X X 385.

Relatives: I. V. Zalmanson, father and Z. I. Zalmanson, brother, Riga, Latvian SSR, USSR, Veidenbaum 45, Kv. 22.

UNION OF COUNCILS FOR SOVIET JEWS

WESTERN REGION

Bay Area Council for Soviet Jewry, Southern California Council for Soviet Jews, California Students for Soviet Jews, San Diego Council for Soviet Jews.

CENTRAL REGION

Cleveland Council on Soviet Anti-Semitism, Toronto Student Council for Soviet Jews, Pittsburgh Voice for Soviet Jewry, Chicago Council for Soviet Jewry.

EASTERN REGION

South Florida Conference for Soviet Jewry, Zechor-S.E. Virginia Council for Soviet Jews, Washington Committee for Soviet Jewry, Long Island Committee for Soviet Jewry, Montreal Student Struggle for Soviet Jewry, Greater Philadelphia Council for Soviet Jews.

ZALMANSON ABRAHAM,
Bat Yam, Israel, August 25, 1971.

AMERICAN RED CROSS,
Chapter Headquarters,
District of Columbia, U.S.A.

DEAR SIR: My niece Sylva Zalmanson is presently in a Soviet Union labor camp as a result of a court conviction set upon her on Dec. 24, 1970 for her attempt to reach Israel to her freedom.

As her uncle who knows her from birth and saw her grow together with my own daughter, I am also familiar with her past medical history and I am therefore very much concerned for her health.

Sylva has suffered in the past from an open case of tuberculosis, doctors worked hard to save her life from this disease. She was admitted to a special sanatorium for a long period of time to recover from her illness. It is a known fact that persons who suffered from this disease have to be very careful and preserve their health. Under bad living conditions this disease can reappear. Presently Sylva suffers from the disease of peptic ulcer.

I am seeking help through your organization hoping that the American Red Cross will get in touch with the proper channels in the Soviet Union and request to have Sylva's living standards raised by providing her with the proper diet and working conditions.

I would be extremely obliged if you could provide Sylva with permission to receive food packages from either myself or her father in Russia.

I thank you in advance and hope that you will accept my pleas of help for my beloved niece.

Yours truly,

ABRAHAM ZALMANSON.

LETTERS FROM POTMA

What follows is a remarkable and shocking document of the daily life and sufferings of the Jewish prisoners of conscience in Potma, the notorious labor camp in Soviet Mordovia. The text, written by a non-Jewish inmate in January 1972, was smuggled to the West. The author's identity must remain a secret for obvious reasons. The degradations of these Asseri Tzion—"Prisoners of Zion"—make it clear that the "Jewish problem" in Russia is far from solved.

[Translated from the Russian.]

I arrived at Mordovia a couple of years ago and here I am in one of the dozens of Mordovian labor camps. I remember well the road from Potma to the place of incarceration. In every direction there were deep woods but on both sides of the road, all around, appeared fences of the camps. It appears that life in these regions occurs only in the immediate neighborhood of the camp. It is possible to see groups of people in prisoner's garb accompanied by guards with automatic weapons and dogs. Next to them are buildings, their existence incomprehensible for us, with slogans atop them.

But basically what stands out are fences, fences and more fences. There are many camps in Mordovia. The prisoners refer to them simply as zones. What are they? Usually, it is an area surrounded by a fence—2 or 3 meters [6½—9¾ feet] in

height—a completely closed fence without a single opening. Above it is stretched barbed wire and observation towers are above from which constant surveillance takes place.

ISOLATION

We are isolated from the outside world, awesome, by means of a forbidden zone into which the prisoners are not allowed to enter. It is a plowed area of earth fenced by another row of barbed wire. One finds there an armed detachment which comprises the heavily armed guard. Soldiers observe their shifts in the elevated towers from which automatic orders can be broadcast when any prisoner approaches the forbidden zone.

The zone consists of living quarters and working quarters. We live in barracks which are one to two stories in height. Inside, they are divided into areas of 4-12 persons. Different camps have different arrangements. We sleep on bunks arranged in two levels and at nighttime the light is not turned off, so that we can be watched 24 hours, even while sleeping. This was difficult to get used to.

CLOTHES

All prisoners wear the same clothes. In summertime, cotton pants and shirts; for winter, a thin padded jacket and a hat—all of dark colors, and frequently having been previously worn by other prisoners. Most of our possessions are taken away from us upon arrival, and are not returned until our term of sentence is completed. We are not permitted to wear woolen clothes in spite of temperature as low as 40 degrees below zero centigrade [-40° fahrenheit], a frequently occurring temperature.

Here, one finds prisoners who are being punished for different offenses. One finds murderers, former Nazi criminals and so-called political prisoners. Generally speaking, it is considered that there are no political criminals in the Soviet Union. Therefore, there are no specific laws governing their detentions. Because of that, persons convicted because of their ideas are characterized under Soviet jurisprudence as criminals. For example, in the year 1971, a large group of Jews were sent to Mordovia convicted in several different towns of the Soviet Union for anti-Soviet activity. I have met many of these persons and understand that their sole crime was the desire to emigrate to Israel. And here, all of us are forced to live behind barbed wire.

WORK SHIFTS

The entire life in the camp is dedicated to hard labor. In shops where the majority of the prisoners work, there are two shifts. People work one week in the first shift, in the second week, the second shift. For the first shift, we must get up at 6 a.m., then breakfast, and at 7:30 a.m. is the summons to work. The first shift lasts from 8 a.m.-4:30 p.m., with a 30-minute lunch period from noon-12:30 p.m. At 5 p.m., we leave work, then supper and free time until 10 p.m. The second shift has, in my opinion, the more strenuous work. However, the necessity for rearranging oneself each week is the most unpleasant part.

Here is a schedule for the second shift: 8 a.m. one gets up, breakfasts, and at noon, lunch. At 4 p.m., we arrive for work from 4:30 p.m.-12:30 a.m. We work until 30 minutes after midnight, supper from 7-7:30 p.m. We leave work at 1:15 a.m. We are permitted to sleep at 1:30 a.m. We have only $6\frac{1}{2}$ hours to sleep—from 1:30 a.m.-8 a.m. It is taken for granted that almost everyone working the second shift sleeps from lunch until work (thus, the supposed four hours of free time cannot be used).

In general, it is considered that work is the basis for re-education of criminals and therefore it is assigned the most important and special role in the life of the camp. Both the encouragement and punishment of the prisoner is determined by his attitude toward work. Moreover, work is the only source of existence because from the money earned, with permission of the overseers, the prisoners may utilize up to five rubles per month for purchase of products from the commissary.

The prisoners are utilized in the Mordovian Complex for many types of common labor completely unrelated to their educational and professional backgrounds. The "political" prisoners are used as a rule for the most strenuous and dangerous (healthwise) areas. This I have seen very clearly in the example of convicted Jews, many of whom have received higher education, and prior to arrest held government positions.

THE FACTORY

Zenkovka factory work, to which many are assigned, is the most difficult. One finds there a science associate, Vladimir Mogilever [4 year sentence]; a military engineer, Volf Zalmanson [10 year sentence]; his brother Israel [8 year sentence], a student of the Polytechnical Institute of Riga; Asher Frolov [5 year sentence], a student of the Polytechnical Institute of Ryazan; and Shimon Levit [2 year sentence].

What is Zenkovka? One places into a drill press a *zenker* (reaming tool). It looks like a drill but it has a blunt end. It is not used for drilling, but for widening an opening. One takes an axle, places it into a vise and then turns a valve. Compressed air moves the vise so that the axle is positioned exactly under the reamer. Then it is necessary to move the wheel of the press so that the reamer is lowered into the opening, and widens it. After the opening is traversed, the wheel is rotated in an opposite direction, and the reamer is raised. Then the vise is opened by turning a valve. Without stopping the rotation of the reamer, it is necessary to remove the workpiece and install a new one. Then the entire process is repeated. During a shift, 1200 of these pieces must be processed.

The most dangerous part is to remove the finished piece and install a new one. Switching off the press in this technology was not anticipated, which is a serious infraction of technical safety, completely inadmissible in freedom. The rotating reamer may easily injure the prisoner's hand. Such injuries are fairly common. In addition to the fact that the reamer may injure the hand, sharp, hot chips fly out from under the reamer. To work in gloves is forbidden (it is even forbidden by the rule of technical safety) because if a hand in a glove would be caught under the reamer, then the glove would begin to wind on the reamer with unfortunate consequences—one's hand getting pulled into the reamer.

In addition to the above description, one should add the splashes of emulsion which attack the skin, fumes and horrible noise. The noise is not only from one's particular press, but there is a horrible noise emanating from the workshop itself. Shimon Levit has small cuts all over his hands—a sight hideous to the eyes, and recently he seriously wounded his hand. But this will heal. Volf Zalmanson, without explanation, was transferred here from the technical division where he was involved in engineering work—the only one of the Jewish prisoners. Israel Zalmanson was transferred from the Division of the Chief Mechanic, ostensibly for poor work, although he completed all of his assignments. No one is able to fulfill the work quotas, although Levit is almost able to reach the quotas. The quota load is tremendous and if one does not fulfill it, one is punished.

The loading work is even worse. David Chernoglas [5 year sentence], a former engineer, works in a so-called "emergency brigade". All of us fear assignment to this particular area, the reason being that basically it consists of loading and unloading railroad cars. The work is very difficult and dangerous. Moreover, one may be awakened at any time during the day or night; one does not know ahead of time. Even on a Sunday, one works.

At first glance, sewing of mittens in the camp shop appears to be fairly light work. Canvas mittens sewn in Mordovia are worn by workers far from Mordovia. Such shops exist in almost all the zones. Women confined for political reasons—14 of them, among whom is the sister of Israel and Volf Zalmanson, Sylva [10 year sentence]. These women are occupied almost exclusively with this work, but even for them, the work is tiring. What can one say about the men: Aryeh Khanokh [10 year sentence], Yosef Mendelevich [12 year sentence], Yuri Fedorov [15 year sentence], Alexis Murzhenko [14 year sentence]—excessive demands must be fulfilled in dimly-lit buildings using machines which continuously, break down. Besides which, the completion of the quota is required under all circumstances, if one is to escape punishment.

Sylva Zalmanson, during work, suffers from constant backache and dizzy spells related to constant eye strain. Because of acute eye strain, Yuri Fedorov was transferred from sewing mittens to turning them inside out—work which is less conducive to strain and acute conjunctivitis in the eyes. In general, he is fortunate because the quota for sewing can be met by few. Even the healthy persons are unable to meet the quota and all suffer consequences.

OUTSIDE WORK

I myself work in construction, as do Tolya (Anatoly) Altman [10 year sentence], Mikhael Shepshelovich [2 year sentence], Boris Penson [10 year sentence], and

Aaron Shpilberg [3 year sentence]. To begin, they were merely assisting pushing wheelbarrows with sand and moving different heavy objects. It was especially difficult for Candidate of Physical Mathematical Sciences Lev Kornblit [3 year sentence], a man of weak health, who has spent all of his life in scientific laboratories and who simply did not have the strength for this type of hard work. Moreover, during transportation to the camp, Lev was so weakened that during the first week he was unable to get up, not to mention the fact that he was still driven to work in such condition and expected to meet his quotas.

The situation is also aggravated by the fact that it is almost impossible to endure the Mordovsky frost in the so-called "special camp clothing." In our existence, various changes occur frequently; at any time, one may expect a transfer to even more difficult and strenuous work. This took place with Tolya Altman and Misha Shepshelovich who work together on a concrete mixer in penetrating winds. And then, one may be sent to work on the press, as happened to the husband of Sylva, Eduard Kuznetsov [15 year sentence]. This work is known as being quite hazardous to prisoners because of virtual absence of fundamental standards of technological safety. In the camp, the press does not have any safety—grill and workpieces have to be replaced without stopping the machine. In freedom, one wouldn't encounter this situation anywhere, but in the camp it is permitted.

The workers here are state criminals. The variety of labor in the camps is united by one single general quality, namely, unreasonably high work quotas, requiring not only experience but also unusual strength. This is possible only with an adequate diet. It is difficult for a newcomer to adjust to camp food.

FOOD

For breakfast: "soup". For those fulfilling the work quotas, additional nutrition is available—cereal with vegetable fats and sugar. Since I do not receive this cereal, I do not go to the mess hall in the morning at all. For lunch, one is given cabbage soup and gruel (either peas or ragu—hardly edible). For dinner, one is given a small piece of fried fish and again gruel. Presently, because of the incidents of an epidemic of influenza, they started to occasionally give one onion to each prisoner. Some onions are also sold in the labor camp commissary, but there were not enough to go around. In general, no fruit or fresh vegetables are ever given or sold. It is interesting to note that in our letters mentioning that we are fed "not badly", this phrase is usually stricken out and the letters are returned by the censor.

In addition to the established camp ration, under the conditions of meeting the work quota and "good behavior", prisoners have the right to buy products in the commissary to the extent of a miserly sum of up to five rubles per month. The assortment of products offered in the commissary is quite meager: margarine, cheese that looks like salami, canned fish of poor quality, candy (hard candy and caramels), grey bread (poor quality white bread), tobacco, fruit jam and also such necessary items as toothpowder, envelopes and stamps. The above assortment has been established officially and has not changed in the course of several decades.

Food in the hospital is substantially better than in the camp according to so-called form 6B. Basic differences: white or grey bread, compote or pudding (thickened with potato starch, not gelatin), milk (250 grams per week), and one piece of meat (50 grams per day) for dinner as the main course. To enter the hospital for treatment and food is the ambition of every prisoner. This is, of course, difficult.

CAMP HOSPITAL

The camp hospital has approximately 120 beds, while the total number of prisoners in the strict and special regime camps serves a population of 1500. The hospital has almost no specialist if one does not count the three therapists, one surgeon and one dental technician, all of whom have just finished medical training and lack experience. The doctors work from 10 a.m.—5 p.m. In evening and night hours, during holidays and relief days, service is not rendered at all since there is no doctor on duty. Instead of a doctor and in place of a nurse and sanitary worker, there is a person—a so-called "paramedic"—who has no medical training. For example, in the hospital of the Seventh Barrack, the paramedic is a former tractor driver.

It is interesting that even in the hospital, in spite of the fact that work is not forced, differences in regime are preserved: for those in the strict regime are in

wards, and the specials are usually kept in solitary rooms. In cases of surgical intervention, the sick person is brought on a stretcher directly from the zone by prisoners. Afterwards, following the operation, the patient is carried back to the zone.

The supply of drugs in the medical division is very meager and most of the medicines are kept for a long time beyond the limit of their utility. It is forbidden to receive drugs from relatives. Altman's wife was refused permission to pass on Vikalin to her husband which he needed for stopping cruel pains in his stomach. Federov's wife was forced to leave Sinalar which she brought for her husband Yuri in the guard room. Eventually, the drug was transmitted to the hospital and Yuri has made occasional use of it for curing eczema, which has developed in the camp.

SUFFERING

Vladik Mogilever, who is not able to cope with heavy physical labor (I have already spoken of work in the reaming shop) because of acute nearsightedness, has been transferred to work that has no quotas--into a brigade for producing wooden logs. So he is sawing wood quietly in fresh air. It was possible for him to gain admission into the hospital and obtain from them an appropriate note--which explains the beautiful changes that have taken place for him. For many others, to be admitted to the hospital is like reaching the cup of the holy grail.

Edik Kuznetsov has been suffering with hellish pains in his stomach, suggesting stomach ulcers. He was completely downed by sharp pain following heavy labor and with endless nausea. However, no one believed him and he was driven to work, and was stuffed with some kind of tablet used for dysentery without establishing the diagnosis! There was no mention even of special nutrition, although Edik doesn't even consume one tenth the camp ration.

To attain a diagnosis is a very complex business, which frequently requires several months. Appeals to the camp administration usually brings no results, and despairing prisoners undertake hunger strikes as a protest, which lasts many days and further undermines their health. One pays a high price for any medical service in camp!

Only after a week-long hunger strike was Edik Kuznetsov finally placed into the hospital. As a result of a primitive investigation, the doctor diagnosed gastritis, in spite of obvious symptoms of stomach ulcers. Surprised, Edik requested an x-ray examination, but was "promised" it in a month. No measures were taken except that he was given some tablet to counteract nausea, and now Kuznetsov finds himself back in the zone in the same condition he was before.

His wife, Sylva Zalmanson, is developing a stomach ailment with similar symptoms--sharp pain and nausea. Moreover, her hearing has deteriorated. Sylva needs very badly a thorough medical examination which under the conditions existing in Mordovia is practically impossible to obtain.

Anatoly Altman came into the zone with an ulcer of the duodenum which was diagnosed while he was still free. He began to experience pains almost from the start and was one of the first Jews to gain admission to the hospital. He left the hospital, however, with a diagnosis of gastritis which does not require special nutrition.

Shimon Levit is suffering with inflammation of frontal sinuses. In the course of a long period of time, in view of the absence of a specialist, the only medication he received was headache pills. After a sharp deterioration of his condition, he was relieved of work. He had a high temperature, but due to the fact that the prisoners are conveyed to the hospital on Fridays, even though he was in the same zone as the hospital, all treatment was postponed by almost a week. From the hospital, he was released with temperature, which even now occurs every evening.

Solomon Dreisner experienced for two months severe tooth discomfort and was unable to get an appointment with the doctor. After he was notified that his mother died, he developed an inflammation of the tertiary nerve, this causing him unbearable pain. The head of the medical division, a woman, declined to render him emergency medical treatment, threatening him with punitive isolation. He was forced to go to work in his sick condition. Since he was unable to work, he was deprived of a scheduled visit. Solomon wrote several complaints to different departments complaining about lack of medical treatment and his unreasonable punishment. Being led to extreme mental anguish, he has declared a hunger strike for six days. Prison officials have told him to visit a special department in prison and told him he is a troublemaker and is having a bad effect on other prisoners. They have threatened punitive measures.

Jacob Michaelovich Suslensky suffered from heart trouble on Sunday, December 5, 1971. I, myself, was not a witness to his severe pain. Naturally, in the morning he went to the medical division of the prison. He was required to work on the second shift. He requested medication and relief from work at least for one day. Monday, the chief of the medical department, a paramedic Yegenova, told him, "You should spend less time studying the Jewish language." However, she did not release him of his work. When I saw him I was surprised and even more surprised while hearing his account.

Mogilever went after work with the sole purpose of checking out what had happened. The reality has exceeded all expectations. The chief paramedic very quietly repeated all she had told Yacov while Vladik showed a certain amount of confusion. He has reminded the paramedic Yegenova about State 123 of the USSR Constitution, which declares the racial and national equality under law and also State 74 of the Ukrainian Union of the USSR, which punishes those who violate equality under the law. On the question "And where did you learn that Suslensky is studying the Hebrew language?" the chief innocently replied, "Don't you think that the Section G Internal Order has informed us of this?" What is truth is truth. The Section of Internal Order not only informed on us, but it makes the final decision whether a man, for example, would be directed to medical treatment. Let me point out that Yasha (Jacob) already twice has been stricken from the list. He has complained about the poor medical attention to the prosecuting attorney overseeing the Soviet Socialist Republic.

One can easily imagine how such medical service is reflected upon the health of the people, if in order to be medically treated it is necessary to secure from the devil a statement about good behavior—without any verbal dependence on all the rules and regulations of the labor camp. A slight deviation is followed by punishment. The variety of the different punishments in the labor camp is without end, for example, the removal of the right to receive mail and an increase in the duration of sentence.

Prevention of receipt of packages is an example of punishment. By the way, this is the single source of additional food for the inmate, because to receive packages is permitted only after one has served half his sentence, irrespective of his length of confinement. Only one package up to five kilograms [11 pounds] in one year is permitted, and even then provided that your rights have not been rescinded. In a package up to one kilogram [2.2 pounds] which an inmate receives twice a year from the beginning of confinement, one may receive only dry goods. According to the instructions of the camp, these products must involve crackne (a ring-shaped piece of dried mutton) and biscuits. Every other kind of food is forbidden.

Imprisoned Jews have been sent packages of boullion cubes. However, even this was eventually forbidden. The excuse was that while they are dry goods, they are of meat extract and meat is forbidden. Chocolate is also forbidden because "it is a substance that leads to 'excitement' ". However, even the lack of this very insignificant addition to the products, makes it more difficult to endure the life in the camp.

VISITS

Even more severe punishment is the removal of visiting rights. For those who are in the camp, the receipt of letters and visits is important as a symbol of human ties. It is understood that the day of the meeting is yearned for with a great deal of excitement which is anxiously anticipated with preparation for several days as if it were possible to live again with one's visiting family, even though the actual duration of the visit is four hours under the watchful eyes of the supervisors. During the personal visit, one is not required to work, according to the desire of the person in charge of the labor camp. However, I have not witnessed even once that a Jewish inmate would have been given visiting rights without requiring him to work an entire working day. In 1971, this was done in the cases of Aaron Shpilberg, David Chernoglas, Victor Boguslavsky [3 year sentence], Lassal Kaminsky, Yuri Fedorov, Anatoly Altman and in general all the imprisoned Jews.

The reduction even with the very brief time for visitation cannot be understood. It is a senseless cruelty if one would consider that the relative may have to travel hundreds of miles to meet this forthcoming difficult blow and others for which they are really not prepared. The supervisors of the visits treat the relatives very harshly and with a deep hatred and this all is allowed to continue without reprisals for these prison officials. In spite of this, none of the relatives enter a com-

plaint, fearing that the duration of the visit will be shortened. Any complaints to the overseer of the labor camp leads to no result. The women's supervisors feel they are in complete authority, even more so. Contrary to the law is the personal search to which relatives are subjected prior to the visit, which, of course, is not sanctioned by any prison regulations. However, it is impossible to say anything; otherwise, visits may be completely forbidden. This is what happened to the wives of Chernoglas and Kaminsky and the relatives of Kuznetsov. It involved actually body contact and turning the pockets inside out and emptying of the pocketbooks. These searches are carried out for the purpose of finding forbidden objects: guns, alcoholic beverages, narcotics, poisons, cigarettes, and food.

Letters and postcards from Israel are criminal objects from the viewpoint of the supervisor. These items are removed after the search. That is about all that one could find on the relatives of confined Jews. However, the degrading process of search is repeated time and again. Frequently the visit is forbidden. The reason given—the work quota had not been fulfilled. Israel Zalmanson has been forbidden his forthcoming visit. At first officials gave a warning. However, he had fulfilled his normal 80% and they punished him. The same thing happened to Alexy Murzhenko. He had not fulfilled his quota for two days and has been denied visitors for all 1972. Alexy declared a 27-day hunger strike. Fedorov and Kuznetsov acted in solidarity with him in a 14-day hunger strike. Alexy is now near death, and has ceased his hunger strike only when the prosecuting attorney promised to change the punishment to something else.

Eduard Kuznetsov is denied all visitors because he does not have any close relations. His mother is bedridden and his wife Sylva Zalmanson is not permitted to visit her husband in the camp compound. Why wouldn't they change a personal visit when he has no relatives, so that he could be visited by friends at least twice per year? However, this has been forbidden. It seems that Edward could have had personal visits with Sylva who is located a few kilometers from him. However, this has been completely forbidden. At this time the prison officials require the examination of the original marriage certificate, while in spite of the fact in all official documents Sylva and Edward are entered as husband and wife. This difficulty has existed for at least one year, of husband and wife being denied visits.

LETTERS

All the correspondence of the Jewish prisoners is subject to very strict censorship. The doctor is the exception; the rest of the prison officials are censors. The inmates are forbidden to describe the life in the camp—the daily schedule and the quality of food. The correspondence should be strictly personal; otherwise, the letters simply are not transmitted to the people to whom they are addressed or they receive them with many parts stricken out. This is especially sad because political inmates are not able to receive correspondence from their close relatives whose content could not be contested. This is done for the purpose of suppressing the spirit of the inmates and is done to make them feel that since no one writes to them they are completely forgotten. Now it is known that the letters of the wife of David Chernoglas are destroyed before they are delivered. Fedorov and Kuznetsov have not received letters from their relatives during the past two months, while they are being continuously written.

On the other side, the letters from the camp do not reach their relatives while the administration usually claims they are not responsible for the loss. The wife of Murzhenko has not received any news from her husband in three months and this is especially strange because, under normal conditions, the mail works quite efficiently. It was maliciously declared to Boris Penson's mother that the supervisor suggested to her son that he write regularly so that his mother would not worry. When he did write regularly, however, the letters were lost as in many cases.

PROPAGANDA

The "educational work" within the labor camp is well funded, which is incomprehensible. Why should education in the spirit of Soviet morality be given to Jews who forever wish to leave the Soviet Union and live under different conditions? Once a week, political classes take place to which attendance is mandatory while one's absence is punishable. The chief "educator" also works for the "Section of Internal Order." He carefully scrutinizes the attendance and activity at the time of these classes. In the process of education the work does not stop even in view of the opposing national and self-determination, and religiousness of the

confined Jews. Another sentence, I recall now—Josef Mendelevich—and how they persecuted him for wearing a skullcap, which for a religious Jew is very necessary. Lazar Trachtenberg [2 year sentence] was forbidden to read the annual prayer for his deceased mother, the *Kaddish*, because they have forbidden his receiving from home a *Siddur* (prayerbook) or Bible. This is in order to intercept the possibility of religious agitation in the confines of the labor camp, which is a heinous crime under the conditions of everyday atheist propaganda.

As for the educational objectives of the inmates, it is forbidden to receive books from friends and relatives even through the special "book by mail" organization. The orders for literature are frequently left on the table of the censor. It is difficult to explain why books published in the Soviet Union are forbidden to the inmate. In addition, one can neither receive nor order newspapers of the friendly socialist countries.

HEBREW FORBIDDEN

How strange that there is for the Jews a proscription against studying Hebrew. Captain Patchugan had a discussion with Mogilever on this subject. On the question of why Armenians, Ukrainians, Latvians and other nationalities are permitted to study their native tongues, the chief of operations replied, "They belong to their own nationality whereas you do not," and, "Furthermore, you Russian Jews must speak only in Russian." During the conversation, Captain Patchugan has spoken in angry and offensive terms about the Hebrew language and writing and offended the human and national aspirations of Vladimir Mogilever.

The offensive incident with the illness of Jacob Suslensky was due to his study of the Hebrew language. He was refused entrance to the hospital. I have already described this. For what and due to whom is all this necessary? The prisoners of other nationalities do not have to endure these painful aforementioned experiences. The desire to learn one's language and literature, Major Sorokin from Camp #19 has claimed, is Zionism, which under the conditions of the anti-Zionist campaigns, one can conclude is a direct threat.

But it seems that the Jews are ready to carry through and not be denied their goals.

LETTER FROM PRISON—TRANSLATION

Greetings to you, our brothers and sisters, on Independence Day! This is a holiday for the Jewish People in Israel and in the Diaspora, and also for us, who find ourselves in this camp here in the Soviet Union.

We have not had the opportunity to learn our own language in our schools, and you will therefore excuse our errors in Hebrew.

We have not lived in our own home and you will forgive us that we have not struggled like heroes.

They have not, however, succeeded in taking away from us the Jewish spirit and our hope.

Our people now has its own government, and we therefore believe that we will meet one another in our own land, if not in the next year, then soon.

שלום לכם אחותינו
ואחותי היום הצד האחת.
Привет вам, наши братья
и сестры, в День Независимости!
זה חג עצמאות יהודי
הארץ והארצות האלה
אם לנו היושבים המחת
רכוז פה בערית הארצות.
עם לא היו לנו אפשרויות
ללמוד את השפה העברית ספר
ותסלחו לנו שאלות בעברית.
Мы не жили в своем доме,
и вы простите нам, что мы
не боролись, как герои.
Но не смогли отнять у
нас еврейскую душу и
нашу надежду.
עכשיו יש מדינה
לעמנו, דל כן מאמינים
אנו שניפגש הארצות
ואם לא לשנה הבאה
אז המחרת.
1972 год תשל"ה

צאב מוהילבר / Владимир Могилевский /
ק'ר צ'רנאטצ / David Chernomir /
צאב צלמנסון / Владимир Залмансон /
ישראל צלמנסון / Израил Залмансон /
מחזקו / מימון לבית /
עמנו קרונקר / Соломон Френц /
יעקב סוסלנסקי / Яков Сусленский /
יוסף מנדלביץ / Иосиф Менделевич /
העם שר / Гипель Шур /

Letter Smuggled Out of Potma Camp.

APPEAL OF A GROUP OF FORMER PRISONERS OF ZION TO THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL,
TO THE WORLD JEWISH COMMUNITIES, TO ALL THE PEOPLE OF GOOD WILL

We, Prisoners of Zion—victims of the anti-Jewish trials in the USSR in recent years—who are now free and in Israel, entreat in behalf of our friends who are still languishing in prisons.

We appeal to all the people of good will, to all the Jewish communities in the world, to the people of Israel—to strengthen the struggle for their release.

We spent only 1-2 years behind barbed wire. But even in this comparatively short period we felt that we were disintegrating physically. Hard work, malnourishment, absence of any elementary medical care, systematic punishments such as transfer to isolation cells or deprivation of food—all these are more than enough to bring a normal, healthy man to a state of total physical exhaustion. And an ill man—to death. A good illustration of this is the death of Yuri Galanskov in one of the Mordovian camps. He was not able to survive the conditions in which he was being held for a period of less than six years, and died only a year before he was due to be released. In the prime of life, only 33 years old, he died because he was not given the elementary medical care he required.

Nevertheless, even the horrible conditions of life, slave labour, brutal punishments do not fully characterise the tragic position of the Jewish political prisoners.

There is another factor, which may seem to be less horrible, but which, in fact, is more dangerous. We refer to the anti-semitic persecution of the imprisoned Jews—humiliation by KGB-men and jailers, beatings and insults from the other prisoners who had once collaborated with the Nazis. This makes the situation of the Prisoners of Zion especially difficult. The imprisoned Jews may complain only to the local administration, but their complaints remain within the confines of the concentration camp and may be transmitted only with the approval of local camp officials. And these officials are inveterate anti-semites who punish the victim of the crime, but not the criminal.

Complete harmony exists between the camp administration and the former collaborators. And it cannot be otherwise, for we are sure that the administrators, as well as the imprisoned collaborators, follow their baser instincts because of the fact that the higher authorities encourage such actions.

The Soviet authorities are now aware that the imprisoned Jews continue to struggle for their right to leave for Israel, even in the concentration camps. So it has been decided to "break these people". For this purpose they have created an unbearable living and working environment. The Soviet authorities and the camp administration do everything possible to hide the truth about the real conditions of the Prisoners of Zion from the public and to keep them in utter isolation.

The dirty work is done behind an iron curtain which they have built. It has already become an accepted norm that the imprisoned Jews are constantly deprived of the rights to which they are entitled even under Soviet law.

They are unable to receive any information from outside the iron curtain. All this is not at all surprising, this is the very nature of Soviet society. But one cannot but be appalled at the indifference and apathy of world public opinion.

The number of Soviet Jews who are condemned for their desire to leave for Israel is growing daily. In order not to provoke the same reaction as took place after the Leningrad trials, the Soviet authorities are holding spurious trials behind closed doors against individual Jews (Markman, Brindt, Chautzis, Liubarsky, Shkolnik). But the verdicts are not less severe as previously.

We have undergone all the tortures which now await the courageous, innocent people. Now we are in our Homeland. But the thought of the fate of our friends remains with us.

From our own bitter experience we know that any weakening of the world's solidarity with the Prisoners of Zion at present makes their already harsh situation even more horrible.

The 15th of December, 1972, marked 2 years since the first Leningrad trial and on the 24th December 1970 the death sentence verdict for innocent people aroused worldwide indignation.

We, the friends of the victims of these trials, call upon you:

Demand from your governments, parliaments, political parties and public organizations that whenever possible during each and every contact with Soviet representatives they raise the question of the liberation of the Prisoners of Zion; send petitions, letters, telegrams with the same demands to the Soviet authorities;

Organise protest meetings and send the resolutions adopted to the Soviet authorities as well as to the various international organisations;

Write to the Prisoners of Zion, give them moral encouragement!
Freedom for all our brothers, who have been put in concentration camps,
their only crime a yearning to remain Jews, a wish to live in their Motherland
despite the Soviet policy of forced assimilation!

Averbuch (Aleksandrovich) Ruth, Voloshin Arkady, Ontman Lily,
Palatnik Raiza, Trachtenberg Lazar, Shepselovich Mikhail, Shor Hilel.

THE CASE OF BORIS PENSON

Boris Penson was born in Tashkent, Uzbekistan in 1946, his family moved shortly afterwards to Riga. When Boris was only ten years old his father was arrested and sentenced to seven years of hard labor. At fourteen Boris entered the studio of the painter Simon Gelberg. He remained there until the age of seventeen when he himself was arrested and sentenced to hard labor. Released in 1968 after three and one half years in prison, he painted intensively until his second arrest in June 1970. He had become active in the Jewish national movement and had painted posters for Rumbule—the “Babi Yar” of Riga. This short span of activity ended when he was accused and convicted of planning the theft of an airplane to escape from Russia. This time he was sentenced to ten years of forced labor and his personal property was confiscated. He is currently imprisoned in a labor camp, having served two years of the ten year sentence. Boris started a hunger strike on the first of January, 1973, this being the only “legal” form of protest permitted in Soviet labor camps.

Boris Penson's paintings have been secretly brought from Russia by his friends. His work was shown at the Jewish Museum in New York (October and November 1972) and reviewed most favorably. Affected by the squalor and terror of prison, he gropes toward formal means that can evoke the moods of anguish and oblivion, the feelings of being both threatened by and estranged from Soviet society, and the fear of being rendered extinct as a human being.

In his “self portrait” [See p. 282] one senses behind the introverted and restrained expression a confident assertion of the self which is grounded in commitment and defiance. It is an image of a tense young man with great inner resources and strength. The artist shows a genuine inventiveness and potential, Boris Penson, twenty six years old.

Boris Penson writes from a Soviet prison: May 13th, 1972. . . . I am tortured by the vivid experience of an idea that becomes a vision—colors, lines, forms, half-shadows. Often it gets together in a stormy way. This is almost jazz music, an improvisation. One can improvise for a long time. There are variations and more variations, until almost nothing remains of the idea. The outside world can accept or refuse whatever has arisen, there can be empathy, this depends on the force of the work, also much depends on the spectators themselves. . . .

August 12, 1971. It is the same forever, weekdays without end or limit, large round tree trunks, shreds of boiled-out cabbage for lunch. Your letters, even post-cards, are feast days. No possibility to paint or draw. I think of paintings. I was always in haste to paint. I have no patience, I want so much to paint. Now I know what I want and how to do it. Everything is clear and lucid, as it never was in that other life. Forgive me for my rare and short letters. There is an unavoidable pair of eyes that poisons the desire to write.

LETTERS FROM BORIS PENSON, SOVIET JEWISH “PRISONER OF CONSCIENCE,” MAY 18, 1972

[Translated from Russian]

MOISHE!

You are quite a fellow! Everything's ok. I'm glad you're now forced to take up art. This is not without use. Maybe you'll take up art history seriously? There might be a possibility to study from afar. This is not easy but a worthwhile occupation. I can well imagine how difficult these things are for you now!

Regarding the names for paintings, I can only recommend in difficult cases (maybe this is even better), not to give names but call them “opus no. so-and-so”, or “variation, number so-and-so.” Often a name is important because it gives a key or a certain superstructure to the painting. And even more to my works, which as you rightly remarked, are specific. This is a difficult task to make you understand, now, in a letter, an idea on the cluster of thoughts that trouble me. But I will try, slightly, to express some of these ideas. These could really form a

treatise. I will take just one as an example. But, of course, it is important for you to grasp not an idea but the *very essence* of painting, or rather, of what I want in art.

The idea of civilization appears to me as the antagonism, rendered visible, of the Town and the Steppe. The Town, the City, is the result of civilization, the Steppe is the past. Of course, as you will easily understand, this is quite subjective, a convention, I bring it in a "literary" form, as if it was an essay composed by your friend.

Grey, busy, stifling, the City froze, after becoming empty. Empty, pale, it sailed off into blue space. Now it is violet, under a red sky like clotted blood, and it lights up in a multitude of windows that are small cubbyholes, and then all is black.

In the cubbyholes are people. Everyone has a slit. This is the concrete mass or organized space. At night, many will exist no longer, just like yesterday, just like tomorrow. After giving to the City all their life, they will suddenly leave it, they will disappear, like you will disappear yourself, unavoidably.

Like all women, she came when she was no longer awaited. The dead city all around, silent. She came surprisingly for herself. An empty flat at night. Her bond with the City—black underwear, sophisticated mourning. A stranger, naked, a woman. Lace, dark shadows—a city woman; but still a steppe woman. A Russian Tartar; her body is firm, elongated, her breasts slightly heavy, with hardened nipples; her breasts smell of bitter herbs, of mint. Her legs are strong and smooth.

There is a trembling strip of light on the window, on the floor, on her body. She is glowing, her underwear is sticky, she is hunted and almost happy. The steppe looks through her eyes.

But these are just words, and it happens even more often that there are not even words, just an unexpressed sensation. This is, for me, a skeleton of "subject matter." This can be a foundation, or be a starting-point. I am tortured by the vivid experience of an idea that becomes a vision—colors, lines, forms, half-shadows. All this finally reaches the cardboard during the process of work. Often it gets together in a stormy way. This is almost jazz music, an improvisation. One can improvise for a long time. There are variations and more variations, until almost nothing remains of the idea. It is covered by pigments, only the experience remains. Work not always gets on. Thus, sometimes, other things happen. That is characteristic of me, maybe.

Existentialism is natural to me in the form of an act, a living through an idea at the very moment it is born, when the process is important in itself. Then the work is finished, it begins to live a life of its own, and already exists for me in another form. (This is like in the old Jewish joke: Chaim, you have so many children, are you so very fond of them?—I am not so much fond of children, as I enjoy this kind of occupation . . .) The outside world can accept or refuse whatever has arisen, there can be empathy, this depends on the force of the work, or one does find something of one's own; then, also, much depends on the spectators themselves . . .

All this, of course, is coarse, superficial. I write like a stormy wave, and in order to formulate all this into a streamlined system, one must touch on many other factors. As you will understand, this is not possible, also I don't like talking about myself, I write it down just for you, I want you to grasp, or rather, to feel the taste of the labor of painting. I do not know how far I succeed to impart this to you.

Your drawing outfit I got. This is all excellent. Thank you! However, there is the fact that just now there have arrived more explicit and more detailed instructions, according to which I can use only simple black pencils and paper. Please send from now on to Mother only pencils of various trademarks (rather soft) and paper.

I embrace you, and await news eagerly.

BORIS.

Shalom MOISHE: I am compelled to write in telegraphic text, hope it will reach you. Your actions are wonderful—everything causes deepest satisfaction. Only the active creation of a situation, where our being here will become a running sore, can bring about success. We react to every persecution by complaining immediately to any authority which might be suitable. It is important that as far as possible, this should receive a broad coverage. However, since all small incidents are dynamic and very quickly lose actuality, there are the things that should receive chief attention:

1. The continuing fact of horrible food (the foodstuffs are only approximately fit for human consumption and the result is 500 calories).

2. We are kept together with war criminals.

3. Since we have renounced Soviet citizenship and on the basis of the above, efforts should be made to have us transferred into a zone for foreigners.

4. The most cruel treatment during hunger strikes (we are forced to work while fasting during the first three days, we are isolated thereupon in the punitive isolator, the doctors treat us worse than dogs, and half an hour after we stop the hunger strike, we are chased out to work.)

You should not get astonished at our frequent hunger strikes—this is the only half-official form of protesting, and according to law, it cannot be a pretext for further persecution.

5. We are continually persecuted because of our nationality (insults, all kinds of administrative pressures, provocations, punishments, the raising of the other inhabitants against us).

Generally speaking, lawlessness, irresponsibility, arbitrary treatment—this of course is no news for you personally. This is about everything I can say on our general situation.

You, of course, feel and know everything. I simply want to stress the justification of your way of acting.

This is everything I can write to you now.

I embrace and kiss you,

Your Boris.

Do Aliyah—and we are happy.

UKRAINIAN NATIONALISM

THE CASE OF YURIY SHUKHEVICH

HIS ONLY CRIME: SON OF GEN. CHUPRYNKA

[From "Revolutionary Voices" 1971, OSB Publishing House, Muntch]

To the Chairman of the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet of the Ukrainian Soviet Socialist Republic from the political prisoner Yuriy Shukhevich-Berezynskyi.

28th July, 1967.

STATEMENT

In September, 1963 I was transported under escort through halting places, from the Mordovian concentration camps where I had been imprisoned, to Kyiv into the prison of the KGB (i.e. State Security Committee—Ed.) at the Council of Ministers of the Ukrainian SSR. [See photograph, p. 275.]

I was not notified by anyone about the reason of my transfer into the investigation prison. And only from the fact that from time to time I was taken by officials of the KGB to theatres, museums, factories in Kyiv, and also conducted to Zaporizhia, Kakhivka, Kherson, and Kaniv, I could conclude about the real reasons and demands which I would have to face later.

And this did really happen in July, 1964, when the officials of the KGB, Colonel Kalash, and captains Lytvyn and Merkatanenko put to me a demand that I should write a kind of declaration which could be published in the Soviet press and which would make it evident that I was breaking with the nationalistic ideas. Upon my question whether this should be a declaration that I would abstain from any anti-Soviet activity whatsoever, the answer was that this would not do. I should write something where I would condemn nationalism in general, condemn the activities of the Organization of Ukrainian Nationalists, quote some facts that would compromise Ukrainian nationalists, as well as condemn my father, Roman Shukhevich, who in the years 1944–1950 was the leader of the underground resistance movement in Ukraine.

Upon my refusal to write (or to broadcast any statement of such contents), they proposed to me to describe at least my journey through Ukraine, so that it could be published in the press. When I also rejected this proposal, Col. Kalash stated that I should do it, for then the KGB would initiate proceedings towards obtaining a pardon for me.

But as I do not feel guilty in any way, I could not write such a petition, and this I declared, presenting my motives in a written form. These are as follows:

1. As far back as 1956, the Prosecutor General successfully appealed against the decision of the court at Vladimir (i.e. Vladimir on the Klyazma, east of Moscow—Ed.) by which I was released from imprisonment, on the basis of the decree from 24. 4. 1954, as having been arrested at the age of adolescence, motivating his action by the allegation that I had tried to contact centres of Ukrainian nationalists abroad (without producing any evidence at all) and that my father was the leader of the underground movement of the Organization of Ukrainian Nationalists (which I cannot deny).

2. On the 21st August, 1958, on the day when I should have been released after ten years of imprisonment, on the basis of the decision of the OSO (Osoboye Soveshhaniye—Special Council—Ed.) of the MGB (Ministry of State Security—Ed.) of the USSR I was delivered a new order for my arrest, motivated by the absolutely false accusation of anti-Soviet agitation among the prisoners of the Vladimir prison.

3. The accusations were based on the false testimonies by two agents of the KGB, ordinary criminals, specially prepared by Senior Lieut. Halsky (now colonel Halsky) for that kind of witnessing, for which they were promised special privileges (which they later received).

4. The above-mentioned witnesses (Burkov and Fomchenko) gave false evidence, contradicting one another, or even their previous testimonies.

5. It was put to me as a crime (and as one of the main counts) that I was interested in the details of the death of my father, who was killed on the 5th March, 1950 in the village of Bilohorshcha near Lviv (West Ukraine—Ed.)

6. During my arrest on 21st August, 1958, a few poems by Olha Ilkiv were found among my possessions and confiscated. The poems were purely lyrical. Nevertheless they were enclosed with my case and put to me as a crime on the grounds that Olha Ilkiv had been sentenced for membership in the OUN (Organisation of Ukrainian Nationalists—Ed.) and for illegal activities, and also because her poems had previously been printed in underground publications, about which I learned only during the investigation.

7. The literary expertise (the experts were Lesyn and Kozachuk) was conducted not only in an unsatisfactory, but extraordinarily unscrupulous manner. It qualified the verses found with me and confiscated from me as nationalistic, which bears no relation to reality.

8. Disregarding the fact that "the crime" was committed at Vladimir-on-the-Klyazma (Russian Socialist Federative Soviet Republic) and that, consequently, in accordance with the existing laws, the case should have been heard by the Vladimir Region Court, I was transported to the KGB prison at Lviv where the investigation was continued, and where I was sentenced by the Lviv Region Court.

9. Although the KGB organs camouflage all their activities with the talk about the interests of the people, my trial on 1st December, 1958 was conducted behind closed doors, contrary to the existing laws, and this proves that I was kept hidden from the sight of the people for fear lest the unattractive machinations of the Lviv KGB become known.

10. During the trial the judges did not aim at an unprejudiced consideration of all the details but at executing the instructions of the KGB, to have me sentenced at any price.

11. My appointed defense lawyer (Smirnova) acquainted herself with my case only immediately before the session of the court. Having realised that I could not rely upon any objective defense, I refused to have a lawyer, but the court ignored my request to conduct my defense myself, wishing thus to cover up all the abuses of the juridical norms on their side.

12. The experts of the court literary expertise, during the questioning, allowed themselves very often to transgress the limits of their competence, as defined by law, and put to me provocative questions (with the permission of the court) which referred more to my personal views than to the materials of the case.

13. During the court investigation only the witnesses of the prosecution were heard (Fomchenko and Burkov), while the court did not find it necessary to hear the evidence of twelve witnesses who could have refuted the evidence by Burkov and Fomchenko.

14. Being afraid that even at a trial behind closed doors I would be able by my questions to reveal the falsity of the testimonies by the witnesses for the prosecution, the court did not allow me to put questions to the witnesses, which could have unmasked them as the agents of the KGB who were giving evidence according to the instructions received from Halsky.

15. Although it was clear from the first glance that the witnesses were spurious, that their testimonies were false, the court ruled that only they were trustworthy, refusing to accept any other explanations or evidence, declaring that it was the right of the court to give preference to these or other testimonies as deserving trust.

16. When, however, the witnesses proved themselves incapable of fulfilling their tasks, namely to prove logically my guilt, the members of the court and the prosecutor came to their rescue and directly suggested to them what they should answer. Prosecutor Kolyasnikov who supported the accusation proved himself (especially eager in this direction).

17. The members of the court and the prosecutor were more interested in my convictions, as if these were punishable, than in the details of the case, and they persisted in putting a stress on them as well as on whose son I was.

As the result of such irregularities, I was sentenced, according to the wishes of the KGB, to ten years of imprisonment. Although I had previously guessed the reasons for such a sentence, yet shortly afterwards I found out that my premonitions were well founded. Thus, still during the preliminary investigation, investigator Vinogradov declared to me that the investigation was only the beginning and that later the officers of the security organs would have to lot to talk about with me.

His words came true shortly after the sentence was passed by the court. Within a few weeks I was called to see Senior Lieut. Halsky and, during the interview, he admitted, without any reservations, that the sentence was passed on the basis of false evidence and that it was without foundations, but—and here I quote his words—“with your views and your convictions we cannot set you free”. I should give proofs of my loyalty in the form of a press conference, an article, a pamphlet, or a broadcast in which I would condemn the OUN, my father, etc. “If we were sure that you would talk with us on this sort of subject, we would not have had to resort to such methods as arrest and court trial”, Halsky said in conclusion.

It became clear to me that my trial was inspired by the KGB with the intention of blackmail in order to force me to come out with the required public statement, and that it had nothing in common with justice. For an act of this kind I was promised review of the court sentence and release from prison. When however, I refused I was sent to the political concentration camps in Mordovia.

I explained all this in writing to Col. Kalash, and this made further talks on similar themes impossible.

But even afterwards the KGB did not leave me in peace, because already a year later, in July 1965, I was called in the concentration camp to see the local representative of the KGB, Capt. Krut', who declared that I should write a petition for pardon to the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet of the Ukrainian SSR. I refused to write such a thing and agreed to write only a short statement in which I explained that I had been innocently sentenced, and that all my appeals to the judicial and prosecuting organs had been without any results, and therefore I was writing to the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet. The KGB, however, was not satisfied with it and in a categorical form Capt. Krut' demanded from me a petition for pardon, which I refused to write. He then declared that the administration would submit such a petition itself.

As became clear later, no such petition was ever sent, and my statement was not answered. From this I understood that it has not even been sent to the Presidium. And all this comedy was staged only in order that such a petition be attached to my file. For in this way the KGB would have shifted responsibility from itself, because a petition for pardon is tantamount to an admission of guilt. But my “case” was too obviously sown with white threads, as was confirmed by Capt. Lytvyn, who said that the guilt of the Lviv KGB consisted in that it had been unable to prepare the case adequately.

Consequently, they are not troubled by the obvious injustice done, by the violation of legality, but by the incapability to fabricate skillfully the necessary evidence. Therefore this incapability had to be camouflaged by my petition for pardon which then would have wiped out all the traces of the flagrant abuse of the law, the traces of the crime.

Out of my 34 years of life I have spent 19 years in prison. For the first 10 years I was imprisoned on the basis of the decision of the Special Council at the Ministry of State Security of the USSR. And although the 20th Congress of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union declared the Special Council at the MGB an illegal organ, its decisions have not been declared null and void, and therefore many people, myself included, continued to suffer imprisonment, and some still do so. I received the next 10 year sentence on the direct instructions of the KGB on the basis of the evidence fabricated by it. They continue to persecute my mother, Natalia Shukhevich-Berezhynska. And all this happens under the resounding declarations about justice, legality, and so on.

No, I have long ago ceased to believe in the declared justice and legality, which I have never seen embodied in practice.

Therefore I turn to you now, when only one year is left before the second term of my imprisonment runs out, not because I have any illusions on your account, not because I hope that you are able to intervene and to vindicate the justice trampled under foot. No!

I turn to you because it may happen that in a few months' time a new crime will be perpetrated against me; they will again fabricate a new case to get me sentenced for the third time.

And, if not, there is no one to warrant that in a few months' time I shall not be killed from behind a street corner by hired assassins as was done with many a political prisoner after their release. I should like to mention just the cases of Lytvyn, Vartsabuk, Berghs, Melnikans and others. Or I shall die a mysterious death.

Or it may happen that a mass crime will be repeated on political prisoners in Mordovia (and everything is ready for that)—that they all will be physically destroyed, and later the executors of that crime will be annihilated.

This was the reason that prompted me to address myself to you, so that you should know these things, and that later, in the future, you would not be able to say that you had not been properly informed, that all this was done without your knowledge, and that you bear no responsibility for similar actions by the KGB.

MORDOVIA—OZERNYI

A LETTER FROM VIACHESLAV CHORNOVIL

["Revolutionary Voices," OSB Publishing House, Munich]

To the Prosecutor; Chairman of the People's Court, Chairman of the State Security Committee at the Council of Ministers of the Ukrainian Soviet Socialist Republic (Ukr.SSR).

I ask nothing from you. Numerous questions, applications, complaints and petitions were shattered against the cold wall of your indifference. With a sullen silence you answered the Lenin Prize Laureate M. Stelmakh, the Shevchenko Prize Laureate A. Malyshko, the world famous aircraft designer O. Antonov, the film director S. Paradzhanov, the composers P. Mayboroda and V. Koreyko, the writers L. Serpilin, L. Kostenko and I. Drach. They did not ask much, just publicity, an open trial of those arrested in Kyiv, Lviv, Ivano-Frankivsk, Ternopil. You were approached with a petition by a large group—over 70 persons—of writers, scientists, students and workers. They also did not want much: to be present at the court trial of their friends, comrades, acquaintances and relations. It was they whom the militiamen later pushed out even from the corridor of the building where, quietly and some distance from the view of human beings, they made short work of the student of the Kyiv Medical Institute, Yaroslav Hevrych. There were many of them surrounded by the militiamen and soldiers in the Lviv Oblast Court and so held, while the court secretly pronounced the verdict on the Horyns. For many a long month the mothers, wives and children longed at least to see their sons, husbands and fathers who were languishing behind the bars. [See photograph, p. 281.]

An orgy of searches and interrogations even now makes the Ukrainian intelligentsia feel sick and prevents many of them from the possibility of continuing their creative activity in peace. You are indifferent to human dramas, to a demoralising influence of fear which, like a repulsive snake, creeps into the midst of many of the Ukrainian families. For you, allegedly, there exists only the law. Let us look, then, at what has now been happening in Ukraine from the point of view of socialist legality. We now have enough material for conclusions. I am not sending my notes because I hope to alleviate the fate of those arrested and condemned. You have already made the people lose the habit of such naive hopes. But not to make known one's attitude to what has been happening would mean becoming a silent accomplice in an act of arbitrariness over socialist legality.

A SLIDE BACK TO TERROR OR JUSTICE?

The Soviet court should not relapse into terror. Its duty is to punish justly for crimes and to re-educate. About the humaneness of the Soviet court a law faculty student learns in his first year. About this the laws say the following: "While applying measures of criminal punishment, the court does not merely punish the criminals, but also has as its aim their guidance and re-education". ("The Law on the Judicial System of the Ukrainian SSR", p. 3).

In recent years there has been a stress made on the widest participation of the public in the re-education of people who infringe on the laws (community courts, probation, people's prosecutors and advocates at a court investigation, etc.). Article 20 of the Criminal Procedural Code of the Ukrainian SSR does not only guarantee the open character of the court investigation (with some insignificant, clearly defined exceptions), but also stresses the necessity, in order to raise the educational role of court trials, to "widely practice the holding of court trials directly at undertakings, building sites, on state and collective farms with the participation in indispensable cases of prosecutors and people's defenders".

The law guarantees all-round, full and objective investigation of the circumstances of cases, envisages punishment of investigators, judges and other persons who try to ensure the conviction of an accused person or a witness by resorting to violence, threats and intimidation. The law clearly defines the norms of legal procedure which safeguard the right of the suspect or accused, guarantee respect of his dignity and give him the possibility of proving his innocence.

Finally, and this is particularly important, the law binds the investigating bodies, the office of the prosecutor and the court, "to bring to light the conditions which were conducive to committing the crime, and to take measures through the appropriate bodies to eliminate them . . . making extensive use of the help from the community for the uncovering and elimination of causes and circumstances which are conducive to the commitment of crimes . . ." (Art. 23 of the Criminal Procedural Code of the Ukr.SSR).

Let us say that having noted that the interest in the Ukrainian publications from abroad and in anonymous handwritten literature is connected with acute dissatisfaction with the present-day violations of the Leninist nationalities' policy, and with petty and important discrimination measures regarding the national language, culture, etc.—Themis' servants should of necessity bring to the notice of party and state bodies the problem of that ground which nourishes such feelings and leads to action which the criminal code defines as criminal.

I am basing my notes on the infringement of the elementary requirements of justice on the material, most of which I enclose (in copy from):

1. Enquiry from M. Stelmakh, A. Malyshko and H. Mayboroda to the Central Committee of the Communist Party in Ukraine about arrests;
2. Petitions for public and open court trial procedure sent to the CC of the Communist Party in Ukraine by a group of intellectuals;
3. Petition to the Prosecutor of the Ukr.SSR and Chairman of the KGB (State Security Committee) at the Council of Ministers of the Ukr.SSR on the admission to the trials (78 signatures);
4. Petition from a group of artists to the Supreme Court of the Ukr.SSR in connection with a verdict passed on the teacher Ozernyi;
5. Petition from the writers in Lviv to the Regional Court for parole for V.;
6. Two complaints to the Ukr.SSR Prosecutor from the artist A. Horska at the violation of the norms of legal procedure during the preliminary investigation and trial;
7. Statement from V. Chornovil to the CC of the Communist Party in Ukraine about the spreading of provocative rumours;
8. Warrant on a search of V. Chornovil's dwelling, a record of the search, two complaints to the KGB and one to the court at the unlawful removal of old publications;
9. Letter to the First Secretary of the CC of the Communist Party of Ukraine from the literary worker of the newspaper *Radyanska Ukraina*, P. Skochko, and transcript taken by him of the court proceedings against the teacher Ozernyi in Ivano-Frankivsk;
10. Verdict in the case of the Kyiv University student Ya. Hevrych, taken down in the court;
11. Notes on the first day of the trial of M. Masiutko, taken down outside the court's door;
12. Svitlychna's statement of refusal of services of an advocate;
13. Svitlychna's telegram to the Presidium of the 23rd CPSU Congress;
14. Karavanskyi's case materials: S. Karavanskyi's petition to the Ukr. SSR Prosecutor and the article "About One Political Mistake", the article "Three-faced" (the newspaper *Chornomorska Komuna*, 21. 9. 1965), a copy of a certificate of release from imprisonment (19. 12. 1960), S. Karavanskyi's petition to deputy M. Stelmakh against the illegal 25-year sentence and re-imprisonment without an investigation, Karavanskyi's wife's petition to M. Stelmakh, S. Karavanskyi's appeal to answer the author of the article entitled "Three-faced";
15. Personal impressions from questionings, confrontation with M. Osadchyi, trials of Hevrych, Martyniuk, Rusyn, Kuznetsova, the Horyn brothers, Osadchyi and Zvarychevska;
16. Separate oral reports by eye-witnesses and witnesses (as an exception).

Contradictions between the USSR Constitution and Article 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code

What the Art. 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code does not provide punishment for:

"In accordance with the working people's interests and with the aim of strengthening the socialist order of the USSR, the law guarantees: a) freedom of speech; b) freedom of the press; c) freedom of assembly and meetings; d) freedom of processions and demonstrations" (The USSR Constitution, Article 125).

"Agitation or propaganda aiming at subverting or weakening the Soviet authority, or the perpetration of defined especially dangerous crimes against the State, the spreading of slanderous inventions for this purpose, discrediting the Soviet State and

social system, and also dissemination or preparation or keeping with this same aim literature of similar content is punishable by loss of freedom for a term from 6 months to 7 years with deportation for a term of five years or without such, or by deportation for a period from two to five years . . . (Art. 62, No. 1, Criminal Code of the Ukr.SSR, chapter entitled "Particularly Dangerous Crimes against the State").

"The Court, prosecutor, interrogator and investigating bodies are duty bound within the limits of their competences to initiate a case in all cases of uncovering of signs of a crime" (Art. 4 of the Criminal Procedural Code of the Ukr.SSR).

"The law is like a pole, it sticks out no matter how you turn it" (a Ukrainian folk saying). The artist of great talent P. Zalyvakha, the art critic B. Horyn, the Luts'k Teachers' Institute lecturers Moroz and Ivashchenko, teacher Ozernyi from Ivano-Frankivsk region, the Kyiv Medical Institute student Ya. Hevrych, the Kyiv scientists Rusyn and Martynenko, the Kyiv University laboratory assistant Kuznetsova, the pensioner from Feodosiya Masiutko and others were tried and convicted according to Art. 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code.

However, the Art. 62, very "popular" at present, is unconstitutional. The Supreme Soviet should either annul it, or make it more definite.

In the present version this article completely strikes out those forms of freedom which the USSR Constitution guarantees to the citizens. When somebody criticises today's nationality policy for its deviation from the Leninist norms, then he is fully entitled to it under the Constitution (even if he is mistaken). But according to the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code, this person may be sent to a strict regime camp by interpreting the criticism as "propaganda aiming at subverting or weakening the Soviet authority" (although the point at issue was only the moral soundness of this authority).

Had anybody in the day of Stalin's rule thought of criticising the cult of his person and in Khrushchev's day his itch for reorganisation, could not this have been interpreted (and it was!) as "spreading slanderous inventions denigrating the Soviet State and social system"? It seems that every argument which does not conform with the directives could be described as such "slanderous inventions".

These thoughts have been supported by practice over the past few months. The judges stretch the elastic article of the code like a concertina. Everybody interprets the term "anti-Soviet" as he likes. (In Ivano-Frankivsk old-time aphorisms, the word "campfire" and Shevchenko's poems have become anti-Soviet.) Yaroslav Hevrych has been condemned to five years of strict regime imprisonment for several photographic copies of books. From the teacher Ozernyi they confiscate and name at the trial "History of Ukraine" by Arkas, passed by Tsarist censorship, the periodical *Zhinocha Dolya* (Woman's Fate) and the non-political book "The Ukrainian Bohemia" by the modernist Pachovskyi (these books are available at libraries). On the other hand, they release the engineer Sadovskyi and teacher Ivanyshyn "on parole" and tell their colleagues that this man or that woman "distributed slanderous materials" (i.e. they did the same as Hevrych). They condemn M. Horyn to six years, P. Zalyvakha to five years in strict regime camps, and release Svitlychnyi and Kosiv without a trial, although all were accused of the same offense. Where is the logic, then?

The law must be formulated clearly and, according to Art. 4 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code, not a crime must be left unpunished. But if the present-day trials are held not to frighten the public, but with sincere desire to adhere to the letter and the spirit of the law, then, having said "a", it is necessary to say also "b". It is necessary immediately to imprison also those who gave the book to Hevrych, Martyniuk or to Ozernyi. After 6 or 7 months in the care of KGB they would tell in their turn where they got the book and would get the deserved "legal" 5 or 6 years of hard regime and so forth. This would lead to the inconsiderate scholar who showed these special stock notes to somebody, or to a poor chap who out of idle curiosity took some book from a tourist or a relation who came from abroad. It is also necessary to deal with anecdotes. For many of them are purest "slanderous fabrications" which "discredit the State and social order". The bringing to trial for anecdotes so popular among townfolk would help radically to solve the housing shortage in big towns.

Article 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code, if applied honestly, enables the population of camps to be expanded to, or even to surpass Stalinist limits. The great possibilities of this article which can be applied without exception to anyone who repeats after Mayakovsky's hero: "We, comrades, need not think if the leaders think"—is also illustrated by this fact:

Refusal to Give Evidence in Court

... After I refused, on 16th April, to give evidence at a closed trial in Lviv, it was announced to me that I was being brought to trial in accordance with Art. 172 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code (refusing to testify). The decision was in itself unlawful, for I refused to give evidence only at a secret trial. But even this decision was not enough for the enraged prosecutor Antonenko and judge Rudyk. They annulled their own decision and on 19th April decided to make me answer in accordance with Art. 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code. These dispensers of justice were not in the least perturbed at the lack of factual support as to my "anti-Soviet" activity (with the exception of petty statements by Osadchyi not supported by witnesses or myself), they knew very well what Art. 62 was ... True, the Ukr.SSR Supreme Court annulled this illegal decision on 17th May. Perhaps for the mere reason that a signal was not given yet from "above" to imprison another group of "anti-Soviet agitators and propagandists" ...

Even Stalin Was Not Afraid of Anti-Soviet Literature

V. I. Lenin was not an all-forgiving humanist. But even in that tense period when there were the exploiting classes in the country and when enemies pressed from all sides, Lenin was able to agree in 1920 to the abolition of the death penalty. In his day Chekists (ChK men) tracked down those who with arms in their hands came out against the Soviet rule or prepared themselves for an armed sally, but they did not hunt convictions. Lenin did not order imprisonment of a certain Sukhanov for an anti-Marxist book, but entered into a polemic with the author. Even Stalin, when he still did not dare to break the Leninist norms of social life, was not afraid of anti-Soviet literature.

In 1928 the Leningrad workers' publishing house "Priboy" published a large edition of a book by a White emigrant, V. Shulgin "The Year 1919" which overflowed with gall as regards the revolution, and expressed the hope of degeneration of the Soviet system. The book was reprinted from a foreign edition complete and unabridged. A short preface stated that Shulgin "is an extreme rightwing nationalist and monarchist", "brazen Jew hater", that he propagated "zoological policy of nationalism" (and we shall add that he was not only an instigator of pogroms of Jews, but also an inveterate enemy of the Ukrainians). It was said that the book would be useful to the reader at large, for it would help him to see the enemy at a short distance and to struggle against chauvinism.

From then on the floor was taken by Shulgin himself, and there were no warnings and no explanations:

"As a rule, chrezvychayka (extraordinary commission; ChK—translator) must kill somebody. For the authority which exists on blood only it is dangerous not to have people who commit murders constantly; otherwise they might lose the habit . . ." (p. 95)

"This is the headquarters, i.e. the place where they work out methods of how to force the 150 million people to labour without rest in order that 150 thousand layabouts who call themselves "proletariat" could do nothing. This system, as it is known, is called "the dictatorship of the proletariat." (p. 107)

"The Bolsheviks' love of parades is no less than in the era of Paul I." (p. 107)

"It has been said that chrezvychayka received from Moscow 400 absolutely trustworthy and splendidly trained people. Whether or not is was true. I do not know, but their external appearance indeed affected the imagination, if it did not terrify it . . . These people had a well fed and satisfied appearance. Of course, chrezvychaykas petted and nursed these trustworthy dogs . . ." (pp. 118-119)

"When a small handful of people of Kornilov, Alekseyev and Denikin thrashed their hordes it did so only because it was organised on a correct basis—without any "committees" and "conscientious discipline", i.e. it was organised "in the manner of the Whites",—then they understood . . . and they re-established the army . . . Of course, they think they have created the Socialist army which has been fighting "in the name of the International"—but it is nonsense . . . In actual fact they have re-established the Russian army . . ." (p. 108)

"Our main and our real slogan is United Russia . . . When Denikin went we did not actually lose him, but hid him somewhere for a time . . . We have rolled up the banner . . . And who raised it, who unfurled the banner? Strange as it may seem, this is really so . . . The banner of united Russia was in fact raised by the Bolsheviks. Of course, they do not say this . . . Of course. Lenin and Trotsky continue to trumpet the International. Allegedly, it was the Communist army that fought for the planting of the "Soviet republics". But this is only outwardly so . . ." (p. 108)

"Socialism will disappear, but the frontiers will remain . . . In any case, one can see that the Russian language for the glory of the International has occupied one sixth of dry land . . . And it has become apparent that no matter who sits in Moscow, be it Ulyanov or Romanov (forgive this vulgar contrasting), he is compelled, he "must," as khakhly (derogatory term for the Ukrainians—trans.) say, do the work of Ivan Kalita". (p. 198)

"The Reds think they have been fighting for the glory of the International . . . In fact, without knowing it, they shed their blood in order to re-establish the God-protected Russian State only . . . With their red armies "formed whitewise" they move in all directions until they reach the hard limits, where there begins strong resistance by other State bodies . . . those will be the real frontiers of the future Russia. The International will disappear, but the frontiers will remain . . ." (p. 207)

When I wrote down quotations from this book, I put "Leningrad, 1926" after each quotation. I was afraid of the appearance of comrades from the KGB for yet another search and of being accused, after tearing out the quotations—in accordance with Article 62 of the Criminal Code of the Ukr.SSR—of malicious slander of the Soviet regime, of Lenin, and even of the great power chauvinism. The fear was not completely groundless. Somewhere in Kyiv Oblast KGB my exercise book is kept safe with various quotations from the works of writers and with the bibliography of Ukrainiana published abroad. There is not a single sentence of my own authorship. Making marginal notes, I did not know when and in what context I would use those materials (if at all), but in the KGB they know well that all that was for the "anti-Soviet propaganda and agitation", for "subversion", "weakening" and "spreading of slanderous fabrications". Otherwise, they would not have kept the exercise book half a year together with 35 books of old issue, among which is even a set of a Ukrainian journal of 1900.

In 1926 Stalin was not afraid that all who read Shulgin's book would become inveterate monarchists and would bring down the Soviet authority. Ten years later he was already suspicious of treason and shot his closest comrades-at-arms, and 20 years later this was called the personality cult. Decades have passed by since, and suddenly in the speeches of some of the leaders the old notes have sounded.

What Did the KGB Deputy Tell Scientists From the Ukr.SSR Academy of Sciences?

Wittily the Deputy Head of the State Security Committee (KGB) at the Ukr.SSR Council of Ministers, comrade Shulzhenko, told scientists from the Ukr.SSR Academy of Sciences about the foreign intelligence services—until he came to the "ideological subversions". According to his arguments, all oppositional feelings and activities inside our country are exclusively the result of the bourgeois propaganda and intelligence service influence. Thus, should the bourgeois world suddenly cease to exist at the wave of a magic wand, everything would be lovely in the garden. In the country all would delight in the fate of the passportless serf, bound for life to his collective farm. In the towns the Ukrainians would be proud of the fact that they had become renegades without their kin or nation. Nobody would be ashamed for democracy, dropping into a ballot box unread papers with the name determined at the oblast or rayon level Party committee. The noted literary critic I. Svitlychnyi would not spend eight months in prison, the art critic B. Horyn and the artist Zalyvakha would not find themselves behind barbed wire but would with impunity have called the Russification an act of internationalism and would placidly have rejoiced at the success of such "internationalism".

The Deputy Head of the KGB made one more discovery for the Kyiv scientists. It seems that it would suffice for a person with a still unstable world outlook to read a book with a "subtext" which in a veiled manner criticises our system, as in this person there emerge anti-Soviet feelings. Hence it is not far to the conclusion: fence people off from the undesirable book by all means, even with the help of prison and severe regime camps. But where is then the Marxist thesis that social existence (not hostile books) determines consciousness?

For ten years I was educated in a Soviet school. In the concluding sentence of a school essay I tried unflinchingly to mention the Party and Stalin, even if it happened that I was writing about the "Song of Prince Igor". For five years I studied assiduously Marxism-Leninism at the university. All other disciplines were based unshakably on the Marxist principles. Finally I passed an examination for the degree of candidate of Marxist-Leninist philosophy. And suddenly by accident there fell into my hands some Ukrainian book, published abroad, and, hey presto,

I have become bourgeois nationalist (without the bourgeoisie!). Later I read a Peking brochure about the "opportunism of the CPSU" and changed into a Maoist. Later still I listened to the speech by the Pope of Rome on the radio (as a matter of fact, it figured in the accusation of the teacher Ozernyi), and became a Jesuit.

Is it not for the purpose of isolating the Soviet citizens from such kaleidoscopic changes of world outlook that Art. 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code was thought out? Marxism-Leninism, without doubt, is stronger than bourgeois ideologies. Meanwhile here they put people on trial for reading a book published in the West, while our books and newspapers full of sharp criticism of capitalism, bourgeois nationalism and the current policy of the capitalist countries, can be easily acquired (even by post) in the USA, Canada and in a number of other foreign countries. There is published in Kyiv specially for the Ukrainian emigrants the newspaper *Visti z Ukrainy* which it is impossible to read here, in Ukraine, because it contains a specialised truth, just for export. Could it be that non-Marxists learned better than our leaders the Marxist-Leninist thesis that revolutions and social and economic transformations are not for export, that an idea will take root on a new ground only when the social, economic and political conditions are ripe for this purpose, that to forbid spreading of ideas means contributing to their strength and attractiveness. For the latter reason, of course, the inspirers and executors of these arrests and trials which have been rolling across Ukraine in a sinister wave should be also liable for punishment according to Art. 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code.

What does Art. 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code teach the citizens? It teaches them blindly and accurately to follow in the footsteps of the latest newspaper norms; it teaches them the bureaucratic morals of philistinism—to fear and to look over their shoulders.

How Are "The Particularly Dangerous Anti-State Criminals Unmasked?"
"The sanctity of citizens' homes and secrecy of correspondence are protected by law" (USSR Constitution, Art. 128)

"Unlawful search, unlawful eviction or other acts that violate the sanctity of citizens' homes committed by official persons are punishable by imprisonment . . ." (Art. 130 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code)

"Violation of the secrecy of correspondence by official persons is punishable by corrective labour . . ." (Art. 131 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code)

The Party considers that the moral code of a builder of Communism includes these moral precepts:

" . . . humane relations and mutual respect among people; one human being is to another human being a friend, comrade and brother . . ." (CPSU Programme)

"In an age when the whistling of rockets have awaked Mars' inhabitants, who could have thought that in the town shadows were following someone" . . . (M. Kholodnyi)

It is easier to work for the KGB men than for the militia men. A hooligan or a murderer takes to a hiding place, but a "particularly dangerous anti-state criminal" takes the rostrum at a jubilee soiree (for example, devoted to Shevchenko) and speaks. Afterwards he goes down the street, accompanied by his friends, quietly, without looking back over his shoulder. A "secsot" (secret agent) may walk almost alongside and listen to everything. If at a KGB signal "the particularly dangerous man" is sacked at work, he does not complain, for he knows that the KGB embodies the supreme, final justice. If he does not weep or repent and continues "dangerous talk", he must be dealt with in a more serious manner. The most modern technology comes to our aid. It is not difficult to make an agreement with the post office, telegraph and telephone exchange. Ask the employees of the post office and telephone operators and someone will tell you in secrecy how correspondence is censored and conversation checked. They even have a name "*pod-slushka*" (listening in—this is the name for a floor, most probably in Khreshchatyk Street, where they put to use Art. 128 of the USSR Constitution). If an "especially dangerous person" lives on a higher floor (and this is very often the case), then he suddenly notices that the loft, open until now, is tightly closed and he is not permitted to enter it for his own possessions which are stored there. Or else, he is given another flat and, at night behind the wall where nobody lives, he hears a sort of noise. Or he discovers under the bed in a students' boarding house strange metal "antennae" with concealed leads through a window and down (something like this was found under the window of the student of the Kyiv Medical Institute, M. Plakhotniuk).

Thus a new inmate has appeared in your flat. He hears everything: with whom and about what you talk, what you whisper into your wife's ear . . . If you are conscious of this "unregistered lodger" then your life becomes a hell. You weigh every word, you become uncommunicative and nervous. You become used to speaking in whispers and look around, and give the fido to a person who tries impudently to photograph you and your friends . . . Occasionally you make a mistake and offend an honest person, having taken him for a secret agent (secsot). In the meantime a dossier started on you grows thicker . . . Would you say that this is fabrication, that there is some purpose for Art. 128 of the USSR Constitution and the relevant articles of the Criminal Code? That, ultimately, the, degrading, spying, listening in and peeping through the keyholes of Soviet citizens whose crime consists perhaps in that they try to think differently, should be alien to the spirit of our system?

The Affair Concerning the Writer Kontsevych and the Horyn Brothers

In the summer of 1965, some two or three months before the arrests were made, friends from Kyiv came to the writer Yevhen Kontsevych. They came to Zhytomyr, not to commit "particularly dangerous crimes", but to congratulate a friend bed-ridden with paralysis on the occasion of his birthday. Following them there gate-crashed the uninvited local "poet" Oksentyi Melnychuk, barely familiar to Kontsevych. Incidentally, Zhytomyr KGB men had not even informed their envoy that it was Kontsevych's birthday. Therefore the newly emerged Sherlock Holmes had to talk nonsense; he came to ask after your health (this at eleven o'clock at night, in the rain, to a suburb?), and brought a little album of exotic pictures . . . Later, when Yevhen had looked through them all he would take the little album back . . .

After this he sat at the table, chewed and swallowed jokes about his second occupation, and strained his ears.

The next day, late in the evening, the hosts remembered the "gift" from Melnychuk. Inside the cover of the album they found a minute transistor device, either a magnetic tape recorder, or a radio transmitter. They were stunned . . . they did not expect such a present. Melnychuk came for the small album in the morning. Having been told all he deserved and given a push in the right place, he went to his chiefs at the double. A little while later a group of KGB men, led by a Colonel, arrived by a motor vehicle. They started to apologize and beg weepingly for the birthday present. Kontsevych took pity on them and gave it back. But unwisely, for he would have had something with which to illustrate his talk to scholars at the Ukrainian Academy of Sciences.

How is one to explain the Zhytomyr incident? What did the KGB men wish to hear at a birthday party table, where there were gathered some people, some even unacquainted one with the other? How is one to reconcile with the lofty principles of the moral code of a builder of Communism the detestable fact of planting of devices and eavesdropping at a very sick man's bed? Of the man who writes brilliant and courageous stories, who has given no reason for suspicion for any criminal activities, and whom the press has compared to Korchagin?

Of course, the secret agents (secsots) do not operate everywhere in such a crude way as in Zhytomyr. Melnychuk should have taken a course of lectures from the Lviv based sleuth, Yaroslav Korotnytskyi, (also a "poet"). Having appeared in Feodosiya, where the Horyns were on holiday, he quite accidentally met his fellow countrymen on a beach and, inter alia, told them the sad story of his life. It seems that he had suffered in Stalin's camps, and there wrote verses about Ukraine. He apparently felt lonesome, the poor man, for he hardly heard a word in his mother tongue. Later, visting his fellow countrymen with a bottle of good wine, he initiated conversation about the unfortunate Ukraine. . . . When the Horyns were departing, it was, of course, Korotnytskyi who saw them off at the station. When it happened that the ticket office ran out of tickets, he somehow secretly moved by entreaties the stern looking train conductress to accept another two passengers. He had convinced her, so that at Dzhan'koy Station she ran herself to get tickets. And at last but one station before Lviv the Horyn brothers were arrested. Even before this happened the "poet" took a plane to Lviv to continue his provocations. . . .

One could quote such facts again and again. The metamorphoses in the loft of the Lviv based scientist, Mykhailo Horyn, about which he used to talk with bitter irony before his arrest. . . . Something similar in the home of the critic Ivan Svitlychnyi. . . . The same "ghosts" which appear at a literary soiree, or "play"

under the windows of Ivan Franko's son or grand-children, or follow in the street one of the young poets or critics . . . and give a reason to a poet to joke sadly: "And I rejoice, having wiped off perspiration with my hand, white as a sheet . . . In my life, this "ghost" is the first whom I have fled."

PRELIMINARY INVESTIGATION OR PROOF OF A "CRIME"

(a) Search and arrest.

"When issuing an arrest warrant the public prosecutor is duty bound to get acquainted with the material of the case himself, and if necessary to question the accused (suspect) on the matter of the submitted charge and on the circumstances connected with the application of the preventive measure". (Art. 157, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

"Of the arrest of a suspect or accused and of his whereabouts the investigator must inform his wife or other next of kin, and also inform his employer". (Art. 181, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

"During a search or confiscation only articles and documents which are relevant to the case may be removed . . ." (Art. 186, Ukr. SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

"The acts and decisions of the investigating bodies may be made subject to an appeal to the prosecutor who is duty bound to examine the appeal within three days. The prosecutor's decision on the appeal is communicated to the plaintiff." (Art. 110, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

One raven will not take another raven's eye out (a Ukrainian proverb). Finally, the dossier is completed. The person in question speaks about the Russification, criticises those in authority, defends human dignity and the human being's right to independent thinking. There is no doubt, this is a "particularly dangerous anti-State criminal". He must be given such a lesson that others should lose the itch. But for the sake of form, give the appearance of legality, get a prosecutor's warrant for search and arrest. Secret agents (secsots) observe closely when some Ukrainian book or manuscript article on the situation in Ukraine produced abroad would fall into the hands of the "particularly dangerous" person. In accordance with the thoroughly unconstitutional Art. 62 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Code, this is very "material evidence".

Then there appear in the flat defenders of the state security and carry out a search. Like a prisoner-of-war, with your hands up, you wait while your "friend, comrade and brother" goes through your pockets. Sometimes, in order to frighten your wife or neighbours completely, he would propose to you also to surrender your weapon (KGB demanded a weapon from the Kyiv electrician, Peredenko, whom they found in bed.) Then they will show an order. This states that the search is being made "in order to expose and remove the documents of any anti-Soviet content circulated by him" (see enclosures Nos . . . and . . .) [Transl. note: the quotation from the order is in Russian]. But, when after 7 or 9 hours, having taken the owner with them, the custodians of security lock the flat, they take with them complete stacks of old books (some which were "circulated" 70 years ago in the days of the Emperor Franz Joseph), letters, diaries, notes for a scientific paper.

Do not think of writing a protest, refer to the Art. 186 and bring in arguments that letters to your beloved one you wrote not for the purposes of anti-Soviet propaganda, that some authors of anti-Soviet books removed from you died before the revolution. You won't get an answer either from the investigator, or the public prosecutor. The same will happen later, when you complain about the falsification of the record of the investigation, about threats, etc. (although the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code contains Articles 110, 129, 189, 234 and 236 which institute defined terms for replies to complaints and petitions). Sometimes KGB men just forget the boring formalities. In this way they removed from Masiutko's brother, a Lviv artist, without any warrant for a search and removal, three books deadly dangerous for the Soviet system: a collection of verses by Bohdan Lepkyi, a first form reading book of an old issue, and a torn "geography" text book (in Russian). If during a search the custodians of security's eye caught sight of a book or photographic copy of a so-called "anti-Soviet" book, published abroad, the prison doors are closed behind you for many months. A preliminary investigation then begins.

The scheme outlined above is not a dogma. Sometimes they make arrests on a train, on the way back from a vacation (student Hevrych), or on a holiday (critic Svitlychnyi, the Horyn brothers and teacher Ozernyi). At the same time at your

flat they turn everything upside-down, take away "Notes of the Shevchenko Scientific Society", "Geography of Ukraine", the book "Kobza and Kobza Players" (kobza is a lutelike string instrument), and other "anti-Soviet" literature (search of Svitlychnyi), but say not a word to the wife about the arrest of the husband. They do not say this on the next and the third day either. Only later, having taken pity, they reply finally that the husband did not fall under a train, was not drowned in the sea, but is completing his holiday in the gaol of the Kyiv KGB.

There was even less fuss with Ya. Hevrych's father. For two weeks he imprisoned the militia, and then the KGB in Kosiv, Ivano-Frankivsk and Kyiv before he discovered the fate of his son. The prosecutors, it seems were not very considerate when they issued a warrant for a search and the arrest. They had no need "personally to examine the case documents", and to question the suspect "on the merits of the submitted charge" (see Art. 157 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code). Otherwise the watchful prosecutor's eye would have immediately noticed the falsity of the charge. The arrests, undoubtedly, were carried out on a centralised instruction "from above". This is borne out convincingly by the fact that a large group of people, the majority of whom were not acquainted among themselves and were not even connected, were arrested simultaneously in various regions of Ukraine. (They have now been tried separately or in groups of 2 or 3 persons).

(b) The questioning of accused and witnesses, and confrontation.

"... The court, prosecutor, investigator and the person conducting the investigation have no right to put the responsibility of substantiating the evidence on the accused. It is forbidden to demand evidence from an accused by force, intimidation and other unlawful measures". (Art. 22 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

"The questioning of the accused, except in extraordinary case, should take place during the day". (Art. 145, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

"The accused, in the event of his request, is accorded the possibility of writing down his evidence by himself..." (Art. 146, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

The same applies to witnesses (Art. 170, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code):

"At the request from the next of kin and near ones of the arrested the investigator or the prosecutor can permit them a visit to the arrested..." (Art. 162, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

The publication of evidence given by the participants in a confrontation during the preliminary investigation is permissible only after the submission of evidence by them during the confrontation and their inclusion in the record... Those questioned have the right to demand supplements and corrections to be entered in the record. These supplements or corrections must without fail be entered in the record". (Art. 178, Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code)

"To force to give evidence during the questioning by way of unlawful acts on the part of the person who conducts an investigation or preliminary investigation is punishable by imprisonment for a term of up to three years. The same act linked with the use of force or with cruel treatment of the person under questioning is punishable by imprisonment for a term of from 2 to 8 years. (Art. 175, Ukr.SSR Criminal Code)

"Why do you look for guilt in me, a common man, and when you find it not, then you are angry with me?" (S. Zalygin). It is not necessary to jam somebody's fingers in the door, to drive needles under the finger nails, to hit in the face in order to force a man to look on his acts as on a terrible crime, and even to admit that which is needed by the investigator for the completion of a preconceived scheme. It suffices merely to lock a person for several months in a stone bag with bars, excrement bin and other attributes of prison life, to forbid visits from any relatives for six months, to hammer into his head day after day and several hours daily a feeling of tremendous guilt, and finally to reduce the man to such a state that he cannot immediately recognize his own wife. As a result of moral terror, threats and promises (which are conveniently forgotten at the trial), the necessary evidence is squeezed out of a person. During a confrontation with Y. Hevrych at the beginning of last December the witness Horská asked: "Say, Yaroslav, what made you lie against me?"—and heard the characteristic answer: "Here they can teach one during one hundred and five days to tell lies". Understandably, they did not enter this phrase in the record of the confrontation in spite of Horská's request.

Here is the dialogue between the judge and the teacher Ozernyi at the trial... "You told the witness that you had read it [concerns a manuscript article on the occasion of the setting on fire of the library of the Ukrainian SSR Academy of Sciences at Kyiv,—V. Ch.]. During the investigation you said that you took the article out of a briefcase and handed it to the witness. Did you hand it over or did you mention it? Which statement is correct?"

"This made here in the court".

"Why then didn't you say this during the investigation?"

"During the questioning I was so tired that sometimes I also signed things with which I was not in agreement. I was questioned for 11 hours, later for 10 hours."

"Did they allow a break?"

"For lunch." (Eleven hours, plus 10 hours, plus lunch time and it is one day already. And what about Art. 143 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code?)

"Were you tired?" (A naive question . . . Had the judge been questioned without any sleep and rest, perhaps also he would admit that the trial he was conducting was anti-Soviet . . .)

"Yes. I told the investigator that I did not give Malyarchyn the documents. I got tired and signed what was written down. I was called for questioning 46 times. On that particular occasion I was questioned for 6 hours 48 minutes. The testimony I make here is correct. I told this also to the investigator. He wore me out so much that I said: 'Write down what you like'. I signed."

At the same trial witness A. Matviyenko stated that in accordance with Article 234 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code she was now announcing a protest against terrorist methods of questioning employed by Captain Rudyi. Then this conversation took place:

Prosecutor: "What terrorist method did Rudyi permit himself against you?"

"It was terror of moral nature. I cannot use unprintable words here . . ."

"How did he threaten you?"

"He said that he would rob me of absolutely everything I have. What is this?"

"It is enough. You spoke about the womanly pride?"

"Yes, it was abused."

"You said during the first investigation . . ."

"During the first investigation you sucked at my letters."

"Why didn't you tell the truth?"

"They frightened me . . ."

"How many times did Rudyi question you?"

"Four days. From 9 in the morning till 7 in the evening."

A. Matviyenko's protest was concealed; Captain Rudyi is questioning another victim somewhere, while candidate of philosophy A. Matviyenko, according to the court verdict, has joined the company of the unemployed intelligentsia.

We do not know by which unprintable words Capt. Rudyi insulted the candidate of philosophy A. Matviyenko, but Captains Klymenko and Rybalchenko and Colonel Sergadeyev in Lviv swooped down openly on the witness Liuba Maksymiv with foul language. Seeing that their eloquence made quite an impression on the frightened girl, they stepped up the pressure: "You, dirty scum, we shall make your and your family's life a hell here in Lviv and in Drohobych."

Do you think that Sergadeev, Klymenko and Rybalchenko were tried under the provisions of Art. 175 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code and sent to develop the national economy of Mordovia or some other autonomous republic? Nonsense! Colonel Sergadeyev will send many a fellow there yet; he is not the head of the investigation department of the KGB in Lviv for nothing.

The legal procedure code contains an article envisaging permission for accused to write down their own testimony themselves. Why, then, was nobody accorded the possibility of availing himself of this right? The investigators sometimes presented the evidence so craftily that everything was turned upside-down. I. Svitlychny's sister when she read the record taken during a questioning in Donetsk, refused point blank to sign "her own" testimony, because it was written in such a way. "The investigator did not always write down what I wished him to", complains Ozernyi at the trial. During a confrontation between the accused Osadchyi and witness Chornovil in Lviv, Captain Klymenko, infringing on Art. 173, told how everything "had happened", while Osadchyi repeated it after him. When Osadchyi said that after all he most probably did not take down Eisenhower's speech delivered at the unveiling of the Shevchenko's monument in Washington (a frightening anti-Soviet document) from the witness, Klymenko jumped at him: "Why did you say then earlier during the questioning that you had taken it?" Osadchyi's doubts disappeared immediately.

The witness nevertheless asked for the expression of doubt to be recorded, but received the answer that it was not his business to interfere with Osadchyi's testimony, that he should read through and sign his own testimony only.

Article 15 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code states that until the court's verdict is passed "nobody may be declared guilty of the crime committed". But during a visit to him by his pregnant wife the same Osadchyi spoke even about

the place of his future imprisonment, the camps for political prisoners in the Mordovian ASSR. I know very well that before his arrest Lviv University lecturer M. Osadchyi knew nothing of the Mordovian camps . . . Bogdan Horyn also received similar information as to his future from his investigator and long before his trial told this to his fiancée. And the investigator Malykhin made a mistake of one year only when already in December of last year he told Olha Horyn how many years her husband would get . . .

If the fate of those imprisoned is decided in the KGB why then is there any need for that farcical comedy with trials (and closed trials at that)? Is it not easier to make up a list of "particularly dangerous" and to place against every name: for this one—seven years; for this one—five; for that one—four years . . .

Incidentally, the KGB men who "guarded" the closed court trial of Hevrych were more forthright when they told the fans expelled from the corridor: "You will all finish there" . . . While the plainclothes "guardians" of the court trial of Hevrych, pointing to a "Black Maria", informed with an air of epic calm: "We have many such vehicles. There are enough for all of you" . . .

In addition an investigator also makes use of a carrot—admit that you have committed a terrible crime, also disclose all who read the books too—and you will be pardoned for a sincere admission. The teacher Ozernyi came to his trial with such confidence. He was the more confident because of his meeting with the Chairman of the KGB at the Council of Ministers of the Ukrainian SSR, about which Ozernyi said at the trial: "On 20th November 1965 in the premises of Ivano-Frankivsk KGB I had a meeting with the Chairman of the State Security Committee, Nikitchenko. After the talk next day I learned that Nikitchenko at a KGB counsel took account of my admission". Therefore Ozernyi conducted himself with dignity at the trial, rejected groundless accusations from the prosecutor and absurd evidence from such witnesses as the illiterate teachers Melnychenko and Khatsko. He even joked with the arrested Gereta who, as a witness, was brought from Ternopil: "Is your case finished? I shall soon come to you as a guest" . . . To which the judge interjected ominously: "Do laugh, Ozernyi. It is not known who will have the last laugh". The last to laugh was the judge.

The State charge presented by the prosecutor Paraskevych and the inhumanly severe demand of a six-year imprisonment were to Ozernyi as a bolt from the blue sky. Shattered and completely lost, he repented, cried, begged and referred to "the great justice" of the Soviet court in his concluding remarks. It seems that this was exactly what was needed to be extracted from him. Logically, the punishment should have been reduced in order that all the others caught reading books should admit the guilt not five or six months after the imprisonment, but immediately, hoping for pardon. Nothing doing. And the court met the savage demand of the prosecutor. Maybe because it was already too late to depart from the instruction received earlier "from above" (where they did not take into account a possibility that Ozernyi might confess). The Supreme Court, when the farce of Ivano-Frankivsk became known to the public, did not free Ozernyi, but reduced his punishment to three years.

Even specially selected people were not admitted to all the trials that followed. And, most likely, further facts of moral terror (maybe not only moral terror? How is one to know with trials?), of perfidy and deceit were brought to light. It is not without reason that during a meeting with his brother after the trial Y. Hevrych complained bitterly about the savage KGB investigator Koval who deceived him, having first promised golden mountains for a "clean heart" admission of a "crime". The golden mountains have turned into five years in camps under severe conditions . . .

The following facts also throw some light on the methods of conducting the preliminary investigation: evidence acquired by unlawful, inhuman ways of eavesdropping with the help of apparatus installed in flats were used during investigation. On this basis Mykhailo Horyn said to one of the witnesses during a confrontation: "Do not be obstinate, they know everything. My flat was bugged". The incident at Kontsevych's birthday party was already mentioned. After, all, investigators did not try very hard to conceal this. At one interrogation, when M. Kosiv could not remember a piece of conversation, they made this offer to him: "If you wish, we shall make it [a recording—translator] spin for you".

In order to cause a moral shock and extract the required confession, the interrogators do not fail to dig into the intimate life of the defendants and witnesses, although it has no connection with the case. This happened during an interrogation in Ozernyi's case. Sticky hints at some sort of allegedly existing intimate relations between the witness and the defendant filtered through even into the court room:

"So, you know Ozernyi well?"

"I met him twice. During this time I convinced myself of his honesty."

"This you did during the outing on a boat and in a restaurant?"

"This has no connection with the case."

The interrogators Rybalchenko and Rapota assured L. Horbach that she had been kissing Osadchyi under the doorways, although Horbach is barely acquainted with Osadchyi. This trick of the KGB interrogators is not a Ukrainian national achievement. As is evident from the petition to the USSR Prosecutor General from Yu. Daniel's wife, Moscow interrogators also blackmailed the witnesses in this way.

Searches

Olga Vorbut, a Kyiv University student arrested for several days at the beginning of September, was submitted to a degrading procedure of personal search and stripping. Nothing was found, for, of course, they did not expect to find anything, but they forced out a "confession" and incurably injured the person's soul. The same procedure was carried out periodically in the cell with every prisoner.

Notes

M. Zvarychevska through a "good" watchman and a "commiserating" cellmate received three notes from M. Horyn, and one even from outside, from Olha Horyn. The notes were not very different from each other: "Mykhailo is telling everything. The witnesses tell everything. You too must tell everything and extricate yourself (I)". Later it became clear that neither Mykhailo nor Olha Horyns sent any note to Zvarychevska; they were drawn by some handwriting specialist in one of the KGB laboratories.

Threats

I personally, as a witness in Osadchyi's case, had to listen to threats and insults, beginning from a pitiful "sympathy" from Captain Koval in Kyiv: "Think about your children . . . You will finish in prison", to a cynical rudeness from Captain Klymenko in Lviv: "Why do you lie and try to wiggle out? We can make it so that you will never be released from here . . ."

Similar facts can be quoted indefinitely. And as a result of such acts and prolonged imprisonment it happens that people of a weak will lose control over themselves. I do not wish to believe rumours that the imprisoned are given medical preparations with their meals which weaken the will and make a person indifferent and agreeable to anything. As a matter of fact, closed trials provide ground for such rumours. Even Horyn's advocate made helpless gestures: his client repented for everything, confessed against himself about what there was and was not; he even refused the private meeting with the advocate guaranteed by law. As if to say, there are no secrets between me and the interrogator . . . You see what a friendship has sprung up after spending seven months behind bars.

In Makiyivka, Donetsk oblast, the teacher Petlyak, frightened by sudden interrogations "with passion" wrote down his confession on several dozen pages. Because there was no evidence of "crime", Petlyak on those few dozen pages analysed the thoughts and feelings of his acquaintances, friends and his own. He even reached the point when he began to look for dubious "subtexts" in his own collection of short stories. The "Donbas" publishers were in trouble after this and argued that "subtexts" should be sought in the short stories themselves and not in the confession of the frightened Petlyak. The tragi-comedy ended with the fact that Petlyak's acquaintances were frightened by court proceedings and sacked from their jobs.

(c) Imprisonment and time-limits of preliminary investigation.

"A preliminary investigation in criminal cases should be completed within two months . . . In particularly complicated cases a regional prosecutor can, at a reasonable decision of the investigator, extend the period of investigation by one month more. The Ukr.SSR Prosecutor or the chief military prosecutor alone may in exceptional cases only prolong further the period of the preliminary investigation." (Art. 120, Criminal Procedural Code of the Ukr.SSR).

"When there is sufficient evidence to think that the accused, if set free, will evade the interrogation and court trial or prevent the establishment of the truth in the criminal case, or will resort to crime . . . the investigator and prosecutor have the right to apply to the accused one of the preventive measures . . ." (Art. 148, Criminal Procedural Code of the Ukr.SSR)

"The keeping in custody during the investigation of the case may not last more than two months. This term may be extended only because of a special difficulty of the case by the regional prosecutor or by military prosecutor of a district or fleet to three months, and by the Ukr.SSR Prosecutor and chief military prosecutor to six months from the day of taking into custody. The USSR Prosecutor General may in exceptional cases extend the period of keeping in custody by additional term of not more than three months." (Art. 156, Criminal Procedural Code of the Ukr.SSR)

Let us assume that the person who read a book himself and gave the book to another person is indeed such a dangerous criminal that the so-called preventive measures must be used against him during an investigation. But why prison and complete isolation from people, as a rule? If a written statement not to leave the place were taken from Hevrych who photographed several books, or if he were let out on bail, this surely would not have prevented anyone from finding out that Hevrych took his photographs in the house of his acquaintance, Morhun, and told his fiancée, Sendurska and her brother about them. The law says that detention in prison for more than three months may be permitted "because of special complication of the case", and longer than six months in "exceptional cases" only. Does photocopying a book and reprinting an anonymous article constitute such a "special complication" and an "exceptional case"? And how is one then to qualify rape, murder and embezzlement of public property? Are we truly returning to the Stalinist times when a murderer was called a "socially akin element", while a writer or a painter was considered a dangerous enemy?

Every effort is made to break the will of the arrested and to force him to use in the court words learnt by heart. The longer a man stays behind bars and the more he has, in place of his former intellectual friends, the KGB interrogator with his one-track song about the terrible crime and repentance as the only interlocutor, the longer will the cell lock click and the watchful guard look through the peephole, the greater the guarantee that the man would be transformed into clay from which it would be possible to make anything at will. What we have here is a malicious delaying of investigation with the aim of complete levelling down of human dignity and social impulses. They regularly suppress in the man all that is human and revive animal instincts of fear and self-preservation.

Let us take the case of Osadchyi, which I know best, as a witness. He was arrested on 28th August 1965. In the first few days Osadchyi completely satisfied the inquisitiveness of the Lviv KGB men. The claims against him were so insignificant that the investigation could have been completed in one week. But only one month later, on 30th September, a search was made at my place, as one of the few witnesses in Osadchyi's case, and they began to interrogate me in Kyiv. One month later again I was called to Lviv for interrogation and confrontation. I repeated what I had said on 21st September, and Osadchyi repeated his evidence from the end of August. Then again a calm of several months. . . .

Having had enough behind the bars, Osadchyi, at the time of the last visit from his wife, spoke sincerely of the wish to part with the prison cell and to get into a camp. Osadchyi's crime (as I learnt during the interrogation and from other witnesses) had been so insignificant, while repentance and obedience so unlimited and the past so bright (a TV studio editor, instructor of the ideological department of a regional party committee, and lecturer at Lviv University) that one week after the arrest he could have been released on parole, taking into consideration that "the crime and the person who committed it" presented no "great social threat" and that "the actions of the defendant did not cause serious consequences, and the defendant himself repented sincerely" (Art. 10 of the Ukr.SSR Criminal Procedural Code). Osadchyi spent almost eight months without trial, dreaming now not about the title of candidate of sciences (not long before his arrest he defended a dissertation) but about a camp. . . .

In our time it is appropriate for dreams to become reality: on 19th April 1966 Lviv regional court for no reason at all condemned Osadchyi to two years in camps with severe regime. However, the year 1966 is not 1930, and it is not so easy to fabricate another SVU (Union for the Liberation of Ukraine). Two attempts to hold "open" trials of the arrested ended in complete defeat for those who conducted the trial.

Moroz in Lutsk spoke about the Russification, unequal position of our "sovereign" republic, and stated that he was no bourgeois nationalist, that he did not desire either the return of bourgeoisie, or nationalism, but wanted Ukraine to have the same rights as have her Socialist sisters Russia, Poland and Czechoslovakia. Ozernyi in Ivano-Frankivsk, although he "admitted his guilt" came out morally and intellectually head above the judges and some of the witnesses.

The students of Lutsk teachers institute also spoke with enthusiasm about their lecturers. Having suffered a fiasco, the dispensers of justice have resorted to such an ultra-lawful and superhumane measure, as the closed court trial . . .

MOROZ REPORT FROM THE BERIA RESERVATION

An appeal by the Ukrainian historian Valentyn Moroz

[From "Revolutionary Voices", 1971, OSB Publishing House, Munich]

To the Deputies of the Supreme Soviet of the Ukrainian SSR
From political prisoner unlawfully sentenced at Lutsk on January 20, 1966

The search has ended. The fugitive comes out of the bushes. "I surrender, don't shoot! I have no weapons!" The pursuer comes closer, capably unbolts the submachine gun and puts three bullets one after the other into the living target. Two more rounds are heard: two other fugitives who have also surrendered are shot. The bodies are carried onto the road. Police dogs lick the blood. As always, the victims are brought in, thrown down by the camp gates to frighten others. But suddenly the corpses stir: two are alive. But it is impossible to shoot anymore; people are everywhere. [See photograph, p. 281.]

This is not the beginning of a detective novel. This is not a story about escapees from Buchenwald or Kolyma. This took place in September 1956, after the 20th Congress had condemned the personality cult, and the criticism of Stalinist crimes was in full swing. Everything written here can be verified by Algidas Petrusiavicius, incarcerated in camp No. 11 in Mordovia. . . He survived. Two others—Lorentas and Yursha—perished. Such incidents were everyday occurrences.

Green Mordovia stretches in a narrow strip from west to east. Green on the map, green in reality. In the Slavic sea—an island of melodic Mordovian names: Vindrey, Yavas, Potma, Lyambir. In its northwest corner there is a Mordovian state forest reservation. Here law reigns—hunting is strictly prohibited. But there is another reservation, not to be found on any map, where hunting is permitted all the year round. If an accurate map of Mordovia were to be drawn, its south-west corner would have to be divided into squares, separated by barbed wire and dotted with watch towers. These are the Mordovian political camps—the land of barbed wire, police dogs and man-hunts. Here, the children grow up amidst barbed wire. Their parents cut grass and dig potatoes after work. "Dad was there a search? And what did you find?" Then they will grow up and learn the philosophy of these lands: "Camp means bread". You get a pood of flour (about 36 lbs.) for catching a fugitive. It was even simpler in the Aldan camps: a Yakut brought a head and received gun-powder, salt, whisky. Just like the Dayaks in Borneo, only the head was not brought to the chief who was adorned with necklaces of human teeth, but to a major or a captain, who had taken a correspondence course at the university and gave lectures on legality. In Mordovia it was necessary to do away with such tradition: too close to Moscow. Such a trophy could fall into the hands of a foreign correspondent—then try to prove that it's a forgery, invented by the yellow press.

Three Lithuanians were shot even though they had not been sentenced to be executed. Art 183 of the Criminal Code allows three years' imprisonment as punishment for an escape, and Art. 22 CC Ukr.SSR even prohibits "the infliction of physical suffering or the degradation of human dignity" of the prisoners. The court of the Lithuanian SSR (a sovereign state, according to the constitution of the said country) gave permission to the KGB men to keep the prisoners in isolation—nothing more. According to the constitution, Ukraine is also a sovereign state, and is even represented at the UN. The courts try thousands of Ukrainian citizens and . . . send them abroad. A precedent unheard of in history: a state sends its prisoners abroad. Perhaps Ukraine has no room for camps, as is the case in the principality of Monaco? However, room was found for seven million Russians—but, it seems, there is no room for political prisoners, Ukrainians, on their native soil. Thousands of Ukrainians were transported to the East—and there were engulfed by grey obscurity. They were swallowed up by the dungeons of Solovki, by the sands of Mangyshlak, later by Stalinist construction projects—the pyramids of the 20th century which have devoured millions of slaves. They were transported not only in groups of prisoners—those "voluntarily" resettled are also devoured by the Russi-

fication meat-grinder in the boundless expanses of Siberia and Kazakhstan, and they are lost forever to the Ukrainian nation. The ancient peoples considered the place where the sun sets to be the Land of the Dead. In the future Ukrainian legends such a country will be found in the East.

The civilizational level of a society is measured by the degree of its concern for the well-being of its citizens. An accident in a Belgian mine buried over ten Italian emigrants. Italy exploded with protests, official notes abounded, questions in parliament resulted. Ukraine also has a parliament—the Supreme Soviet of the Ukr.SSR. I do not know whether there are people there who remember their right to question the government. I do not know whether these people remember any of their rights as deputies, except the right to raise their hand while voting. But I know that the Supreme Soviet of the Ukr.SSR is the highest authority in Ukraine according to the constitution. It authorized one of its subordinate institutions—KGB—to arrest, to try and to do what it pleased concerning the future fate of the people accused of “anti-Soviet activities”. Honourable deputies of the Ukrainian Parliament, let’s chase away drowsiness for once; let’s set aside debates on sows, cement mixers and the effects the use of super-phosphates has on national economy. Let these problems be resolved by experts. Let’s forget about the Land of Sweet Yawns for once and transfer ourselves to Mordovia and find out: a) who these people uprooted from normal life are who have been placed at the complete disposal of the KGB men; b) to whom the fate of these people was transferred.

THE TRIAL OF THOUGHT

In 1958, Makhmed Kulmagambetov, a lecturer in philosophy at Frunze medical institute (now an inmate in camp No. 11) brought a statement to the dean’s office: please settle my account. The reason?—Disagreement with the programme of instruction. This decision caused a sensation. The herd of career men, who have been outrunning each other in the attempt to reach the trough, trampling conscience, dignity and convictions under foot in order to climb higher and to profit at their neighbour’s expense, could not understand how a person could refuse 120 roubles merely because his views have changed! Kulmagambetov became a blue collar worker. But in 1962 he was arrested. The court at Kustanay sentenced him to 7 years’ imprisonment and to 3 years’ exile for “anti-Soviet activity”. How did it manifest itself? The chief prosecution witness was the head of the staff of “Sokolovrudstroy” (ore mine construction) Trust, Makhmudov. The only thing which he could say in court was to repeat Kulmagambetov’s words: “I do not want to teach what I do not believe in.” This was the latter’s reply to the question: “Why aren’t you working in your branch of specialization?” Other accusations were the same. The investigator also admitted: “In reality there is no reason for trying you, but you have a dangerous way of thinking.” A typical example, almost an everyday occurrence in the practice of the KGB, but unique for its sheer arbitrariness. As a rule the KGB men try to fabricate at least the appearance of “anti-Soviet” activity. But here, in the far off province, they did not deem even this formality necessary and admitted that Kulmagambetov was being condemned for his opinions. Thousands upon thousands of people have been tried according to this system, even though their cases may have been more cleverly “presented”. Article 126 of the Constitution of the USSR proclaims freedom of speech, press, manifestations and organizations. Art. 19 of the UN Declaration of Human Rights speaks about “freedom to seek, receive and impart information and ideas through any media and regardless of frontiers”. Therefore Art. 62 CC Ukr.SSR is nothing more than a violation of the above-mentioned documents, a Stalinist survival. The formulation “agitation or propaganda conducted with the aim to undermine or weaken the Soviet regime” under conditions when the KGB men themselves are determining the degree of “subversiveness” of the material, fosters unlimited arbitrariness. In Moscow every year tens of books by foreign authors are published, filled with sharp criticism of the Soviet regime and Communist ideology. If Art. 62 CC is really a law, then the publication of these books is a criminal act. A law is a law only when it is applied to all. Where is the logic: I can freely propagate the views of Hitler, published in the periodical *Voprosy istorii* (Questions of History), yet I will be tried for my own typing of Hitler’s memoirs! Thus, Art. 62 is nothing but a tool of arbitrariness in the hands of the KGB, which makes it possible for them to put an inconvenient person behind bars for keeping any book not published in the Soviet Union.

I and my friends are condemned for "propaganda directed at the separation of Ukraine from the USSR". But Art. 17 of the USSR Constitution speaks clearly about the right of every republic to secede from the USSR. The right of every nation to separation was laid down in the pact on the civil and political rights of men adopted at the 21st session of the UN General Assembly.

. . . It seems that there are enough facts. A conclusion can be reached: people condemned for "anti-Soviet agitation and propaganda"—are those who think differently, or those who think, period; those whose spiritual world did not fit the Procrustean bed of the Stalinist standards which are diligently guarded by the KGBists. They are those who dared to use the rights proclaimed in the constitution, who raised their voice against the shameful oppression of the KGB, against the violation of the constitution. They are those who do not want to learn the slavish, double-bottomed wisdom which interprets the words of the constitution "Ukraine's right to secede from the USSR" as "keep quiet if you value your life."

DESCENDANTS OF YEZHOV AND BERIA

A characteristic of a man or an environment can always be subjective. Therefore it is best to deal with *autocharacteristics*. And it is very good that the author of these lines has a fancy bouquet of autocharacteristics provided by the KGBists of themselves and their system. The KGBists were not mean with words and in general were unceremonious in their talks with prisoners, strongly convinced that their words would not go beyond the sound-proof doors of their offices, that the icy terror of silence on which they constructed their Golgotha would never thaw. But all ice thaws at one time or another, and words, which were growled into our faces at the inquiry and in camp, as if spoken through a gigantic megaphone, were echoed with a thousand voices throughout the whole world.

Where are the roots of the KGB? If we retrace those paths by which the KGBists came down to our reality, we will find ourselves in the horrible thickets of Stalinist jungles. General Shulzhenko, assistant head of the KGB at the Council of Ministers of the Ukr.SSR, was elected a deputy to the Ukrainian Parliament from the Khartsyzk district. Where did this parliamentarian pursue his career? In order to become a general of the KGB in 1967, it was necessary to start as a Beria lieutenant or captain in 1937. What did the KGB captains do in 1937? They killed people for not performing a norm (or merely for sport) in Kolyma. This is not a secret to anyone anymore; Moscow journals are writing about it. In Ukraine they shot innocent people three days after they had been arrested. Their arguments are familiar: it was all Beria's fault; they were only carrying out orders. The same argumentation was used by the defence at the Nuremberg trials. It would seem that only Hitler was responsible. But the trick did not work. Even a new concept: "Murder behind a desk" has appeared in the German language. I have no doubts that sooner or later it will find a place in the Ukrainian language as well.

Perhaps the KGBists have changed, have become different? No, they themselves proudly consider themselves to be Stalin's descendants. A representative of the Ukrainian KGB in the Mordovian camps, Capt. Krut, told me: "And what have you got against Stalin? Of course, he had some shortcomings, but on the whole he deserved a high grade"; and in a conversation with Mykhailo Horyn, Krut frankly said: "Too bad that we are in Mordovia and not in the North". The head of the department of investigation of the Georgian KGB, Nadiradze, told poet Zauri Kobalia (confined to camp No. 11) in 1963 during an investigation: "Did you know that I was here in 1937? Remember that!"

Now they do not wear Stalin' tunics any more and "take correspondence courses" at universities. It is a correspondence course in the full meaning of the word. A student's book is brought to the institute and the "faculty", hypnotized from the cradle on with the word KGB, records a grade without ever seeing the student. A representative of the Ivano-Frankivsk KGB, Kazakov, admitted to me: "Here you spoke about totalitarianism. But I'm no *totalizator*." And the representative of the Ukrainian KGB in camp No. 11, Harashchenko, made short work of all Masiutko's arguments on the unresolved national question in Ukraine: "You speak about a national question. But when a widow turns to the Kolkhoz head for straw—do you think he will refuse?" And these intellectuals are entrusted to decide categorically the questions which even in specialized journals are considered to be moot points. Kazakov, Krut and a Kyiv KGBist, Lytvyn, "cross examined" me together. "What else did you need? You had a good job, an apartment . . ." And for several hours tried to prove that an individual has

nothing but a stomach and several yards of intestines. An idea? Protection of Ukraine from the threat of Russification? Here for my interlocutors the discussion clearly left the familiar ground and became part of the sphere of children's tales. They did not hide the fact that they did not really comprehend it.

An idea . . . Naturally, a great deal is said about it in books, and it is generally unacceptable to say that you have no ideas. But for an idea to be a motive for human activity—that they have never encountered in their midst. Mykhailo Horyn heard the following at the Lviv KGB: "Today is the day of the Chekist.—What day of the Chekist?—Payday." When one speaks seriously about it, it is a myth, with which someone has intoxicated the people and which drags a person away from normal existence based on three major concepts: money, the love of power, women. But an idea—it is a kind of psychological disorder, not always comprehensible, it is true; but one must reckon with it, as with a factor, on the same level with the three others, normal and understandable. Captain Kozlov (Lv.-Frankivsk) lectured me as follows: "One is bought for money, another by women, but some are hooked by an ideal." For an idea to be born independently in a human head—that is unsurmountable.

It would be naive to consider this state of affairs an accidental "infringement" on the social development of the society. A system in which a poet receives a catalogue of permitted images, an artist—a list of permitted and prohibited colours, has its roots in the past, and is a continuation of certain forces and conditions. Before our very eyes these forces are gradually thawing, and the conditions stop being the norm of intercourse among people. KGBists sense this and place all the blame on Khrushchev, who supposedly toppled the idols, which at one time were honoured thoughtlessly. With the same success it is possible to consider a cock, an author of dawn, but this is too great a truism to be placed into the skulls of generals and majors with sky-blue loops.

When Levko Lukianenko asked Capt. Denisov, an investigator of the Lviv KGB: "What is the purpose of Art. 17, which gives every republic the right to secede from the USSR?"—the latter answered: "For abroad" (!). This is what it is! It seems that the KGBists realize very well that they are not defending "socialist legality", but the right to violate it without being punished. They have no illusions whatsoever about their institution and look at it simply as a place where the pay is the highest and it is possible to get apartments without waiting.

KGBist Kazakov brought a letter to me from the rector of Ivano-Frankivsk Pedagogic Institute, where I had worked earlier. I said: "When somebody wants to write me—let him do it through the mail." To this Kazakov replied: "It would be too great an honour." Thus, he feels that the KGB in no case can pretend to receive such respect as is accorded the post office. Why then do the KGBists dislike people showing disrespect towards them?

KGB representative from Kyiv, Lytvyn, declared to me: "We arrested you upon demands from the community. Otherwise the people would tear you to pieces." That's funny! Why then are political prisoners tried at closed court sessions and why doesn't a word appear about them in the papers?—The KGBists realize very well the illegality of their acts and therefore hide political trials from human eyes, at the same time as the trials of German policemen-murderers are being widely publicized.

AT THE RESERVATION

Here—is the only place where the KGBists can completely ignore all laws and norms. Here—is a place where they continue to forge fear. The main efforts are directed at killing everything human in a human being—only then does it become dough, from which almost anything can be shaped. A prisoner can in no way violate the regulations of the regime, but as soon as the KGBists feel that he had not given up, has not acknowledged evil to be a normal condition, kept his dignity—all sorts of pressure are applied to him. And only when they can convince themselves that a human being has sunk to the level of a mere consumer of food—only then are they reassured.

An Osset, Fedir Byazrov, was a thief. Then he became a Jehovah's Witness and stopped stealing. It would seem that the "instructors" should have been content. Byazrov thought so too. "What do you want from me? I no longer steal and do nothing wrong. And nobody is forbidden to believe in God."—"It would be better if you stole." This is no accident. Pointing to criminals they told many political prisoners: "They are thieves, but they are our people. But you—are enemies." This is whom the KGBists are protecting. Morally degenerate people—are the element in which they feel at home, like a fish in water. A bandit is their man. A KGBist

knows how to talk to him. He is a ready informer for a dose of narcotics. In him it is not necessary to kill such an incomprehensible but strong force as dignity.

Agents are used not only in the role of eavesdroppers. Prisoner Lashchuk was known to be a KGB agent. All knew about it: in the Taishet camp No. 11 in 1958 a denunciation written by him was taken away from him. In April 1964 he wounded Stepan Virun (from a group of jurists sentenced in Lviv in 1961) with a knife in camp No. 7. When Virun, after leaving the hospital, talked about it with Capt. Krut, the latter unceremoniously declared: "They will take off your head, if you don't get wise." (Virun did not acknowledge his sentence as legal and wrote complaints.)

Art. 22 of the Criminal Code of the Ukr. SSR proclaims: "Punishment does not have as its aim inflicting physical sufferings or degrading human dignity." Therefore, all methods of pressure on the prisoners applied by the KGB are violations of the law. But where are those who were called to see that the laws were enforced, i.e. the procurator's office? There is a procurator's office in Mordovia. And it would be a lie to say that it closes its eyes to arbitrariness or washes its hand of it. On the contrary, the local procurators, rolling up their sleeves, are helping the KGBists to do their dirty work at full speed. In a talk with an assistant prosecutor of the Dubravnoye camp administration I called his attention to the fact that people suffering with an acute stomach ulcer are given starvation diets, contrary to the law. And he answered me very calmly: "This is the point of the punishment—to hit the stomach." What right do these sadists have to call themselves the defenders of the law?

Compulsory work for political prisoners is a violation of the UN convention on the prohibition of forced labour. Moreover, the KGBists themselves admit that work is looked upon as a method of pressure. Many are told: "We do not need your work; we want you to reform." A prisoner, who should have been sent to a lock-up room, is transferred to hard labour, where it is impossible to perform the norm and where he is punished for failure to fulfil the norm. All rights due to prisoners are treated as privileges which can be taken away. Lukianenko and Mykhailo Horyn, for instance, were deprived of the right to see their families in 1967, even though it is their right (not a privilege) which nobody can take away from them, just as nobody can take away the right to nourishment. Can they take away the one occasion in the year that you can see your relatives? In comparison it suffices to mention that in England a prisoner has a right to see his family every week!

A system of education through hunger is also without precedent. Everywhere, political prisoners have always received food parcels in unlimited quantities. We have a right to receive only two parcels a year after completing half the term "under conditions of good behavior"—is there a need to comment on these words? The bare minimum of nourishment, stipulated by the FAO (an organ of UNESCO), is 2,700 calories, the brink of starvation—2,400. Beyond that a deterioration of physical and mental capabilities of a human being begins. In the lock-up room to which I am confined the "raised" norm consists of 2,090 calories. There is an even lower one—only 1,324 calories. Therefore a crime is continually perpetrated for decades. All should remember that in Nuremberg they tried for murder by iron as well as for murder by starvation. It is interesting to note whether the Ukrainian Red Cross will be interested in the crimes perpetrated in Mordovia, even to the same degree as in the crimes in Africa? Camp food made half of the people sick. Here a new method of pressure—medicine—comes into play. Anyway, in order to be a doctor or a nurse in camp, it is not mandatory to have any knowledge of medicine. A former German policeman, Malykhin, a murderer of many people (now in camp No. 11) was a nurse in camp No. 7. He lacks not only medical training, but education in general. However, he has merits in the eyes of the KGB. Of course, it doesn't happen like this all the time. Now we are treated by an Estonian, Braun, who used to be a driver of an ambulance. No matter how you look at it, but it is impossible to call him a stranger to medicine.

The regulations state that prisoners who are confined to a lock-up room are not to be deprived of medical help. But what do these regulations mean when camp doctors frankly declare: "We are first Chekists, then medics." Mykhailo Masiutko, suffering with a stomach ulcer, is in a very serious condition. But all attempts to have him sent to a hospital or at least to give him dietetic food have proved useless. The KGBists in white coats said: "Of course, we should send you, but we would be punished for it. It is not permitted to give you injections", and some unceremoniously say: "You should not have let yourself be caught." Of course, the arsenal of camp medicine is far from being exhausted. Is it an ac-

cident that there is such a high percentage of mentally ill in camps? The research into the role played by camp medicine is still waiting for the author . . .

Octopus' tentacles have a firm grip on the prisoner even after he leaves the camp's gates. Yarema Tkachuk, convicted in 1958 in Stanyslaviv was told by Capt. Krut: "You will have no life, if you won't get wise. We will fix it so that you will neither have a family, nor a roof over your head." And Kazakov promised me that I "will be sorry."

And this was not just intimidation. In 1957 Danyol Shumuk (now at camp No. 11) was arrested in Dnipropetrovsk for "anti-Soviet agitation". Major Sverdlov of the republican KGB unceremoniously admitted that the accusation is false. But this is beside the point. A choice was given to Shumuk, a man just released from prison: either you will be placed behind bars again, or you will become an informer, as a man who is greatly respected in the circles of former prisoners, and who will not arouse suspicion. For two days Shumuk was held illegally at KGB headquarters without an arrest warrant being presented and was persuaded. Major Sverdlov declared: "If you will agree to cooperate with us—I will tear up the arrest warrant and the protocols of the inquiry right before your eyes." Art. 173 of the Criminal Code of the Ukr.SSR says that "criminal prosecution of a person who is known to be innocent . . . together with the accusation in committing of a particularly dangerous state crime"—"is punishable by the deprivation of freedom for the term of 8 years." Nobody sentenced Sverdlov to 8 years, not even to 8 months,—he had the right to violate all laws without being punished. This is why he is a KGBist. Shumuk, on the other hand, went to Siberia again to serve a 10-year term for remaining an honest man. And now, before his release, a sick man who began his prison career when arrested by the Polish secret police and spent 27 years behind bars, is called out by Capt. Krut and promised: "You will have no life." Shumuk is in a lock-up room for "the preparation of anti-Soviet manuscripts". This is what the KGBists have called his memoirs: five arrests under Poland, a German camp for prisoners of war and his escape from it, and his crossing of the entire Ukraine on foot, from the Poltava region to Volyn, avoiding the roads and German policemen.

When it is necessary to place somebody in a lock-up room—they will place him there not only because he "expressed himself in an anti-Soviet way" but also for "keeping still in an anti-Soviet way".

Prisoner Vovchanskyi was placed there because "he is angry with the Soviet authorities"—this is how it was written in the decision! In order to go to camp it is nonetheless necessary to have a "dangerous way of thinking". But from the camp to a lock-up room the road is much easier: here, as we have seen, people are placed not only for thoughts, but also for attitudes. Masiutko, Lukianenko, Shumuk and I were incarcerated for writing complaints, which were treated as "anti-Soviet manuscripts". Mykhailo Horyn did not write any "manuscripts"—but he was nevertheless imprisoned with us. What for? Capt. Krut says that he found Ivan Dzyuba's memorandum addressed to the CC CPU in his possession. Bogdan Horyn, in a talk with Lytvyn and Marusenko, asked: "Is Dzyuba's memorandum an anti-Soviet document?"—"No, it is not."—"Why then was my brother imprisoned?" To this question Marusenko replied: "An error occurred." There was no error. Horyn, as well as the others, are kept in a lock-up room because they brought with them to the camp the truth about the events in Ukraine and have no intention of keeping it quiet.

The camp routine is completely and in full transferred from the times of Tsar Nicholas I. A portrait of the Latvian poet, Knut Skuinek, painted by the artist Zalyvakha was taken away from him and the painter himself (!) was forced to cut up his work! Does such a society have the right to criticize the Chinese "Red Guards"? The robots in uniforms destroyed all Zalyvakha's paintings they could find and confiscated the paints. Upon demands to show the law which permits this, the artist received the following reply: "I am the law for you!" The corporal told the truth. He—is the incarnation of the law which was made during Shevchenko's times, who also had no right to write or paint.

These are the methods of "re-education" employed by the KGBists. And what are the results? What do the "reformed", who are held up as an example to us, who receive parcels and narcotics from the KGBists, look like? They can be seen together at holiday concerts before May 1st or November 7th. On the stage—an unusual collection of faces, ploughed by all possible vices, a bouquet of criminals of all colors, who it seems have come right out of the pages of a criminology textbook. Here—are all the wartime criminals, those who killed thousands upon thousands of Jewish children, representatives of all sexual perversions, narcotic

addicts who inject cat's blood into their veins if they have nothing else handy. This is—a choir. "The party is our leader", "Lenin—is always alive." If at least one KGBist believed in these ideals, the defenders of which he is proclaiming himself to be—would he permit this? The "reformed" walk about camp with emblems on their sleeves which say SVP (Sektziya vnutrennego poryadka—Internal Police Section). The prisoners interpret these letters to mean "Soyuz voennykh prestupnikov" (Association of War Criminals).

After all this, is it still possible to say seriously that the KGBists are protecting the Soviet government? On the contrary: all their activity undermines and discredits it, pushes the people to the road of opposition.

A Finn, Vilho Forsel (now in the Vladimir jail), graduated with honours from Petrozavodsk University and worked on a Karelian state farm. As an interpreter he accompanied the Canadian Communist delegation throughout Karelia. After the trip the KGBists demanded that Forsel disclose the contents of conversations which the Canadians had with people who approached them. Forsel refused declaring that the law does not give anyone the right to treat him in this way. Then he was told: "Good, you will beg to cooperate with us." Several days later he was thrown out of work and no other place would hire him. If this is a crime, then there is no one to blame but KGB.

Churchill said: "Not one anti-Communist brought so much harm as Khrushchev."—No one else, but the KGBists, in their turn, took over his shoe and are pounding with it at all rostrums both in the UN and outside it, successfully compromising the state, whilst proclaiming themselves to be its defenders. Whilst searching us, they regularly confiscate the "UN Declaration of Human Rights". On my demand to have it returned Krut answered: "It is not allowed to keep the Declaration." An assistant of the prosecutor with whom I spoke admitted that he never read it. At "political classes", which are conducted by semi-literate corporals for artists and writers, the prisoners at one time entered into a discussion with Senior Lieut. Lyubayev (camp No. 11) supporting the Declaration with arguments. To this he indulgently answered: "Listen, but it is only intended for Negroes."

Anyway, there is no need to prove which particular actions are compromising Communism. Poltoratskyi, who recently has been specializing on the Chinese "Red Guards", clearly indicated that it is necessary to consider this phenomenon "as capricious caricature, as an attempt to discredit a just socialist society that has been dreamed about for centuries". This, first of all, is Mao's order "to send actors, poets, scholars . . . to the villages for retraining, that is those same people's communes. It is not hard to imagine what will happen to an elderly scholar or writer, when he is harnessed to a plough for several days to plough the fields." (*Lit. Ukraina*, 24. 2. 1967). Of course, it is not hard to imagine. Let Poltoratskyi come to Mordovia and see how an artist, Zalyvakha, sent for retraining, is throwing coal into the furnace. He was given the post of a fireman with the deliberate intention of killing all desires in him—except to sleep.

Further, the forced dressing of people in caps is considered a disgrace to Communism. "The fact that workers in factories wear caps of different colours was noticed immediately. Apprentices and those who did not perform a norm were without caps. Those who performed the norm—wore yellow caps. And only those who over-performed could put on a red cap." (*Nauka i religiya* (Science and Religion) No. 3, 1967, p. 7). Had this happened in Tientsin or Wuhan, Poltoratskyi would immediately speak about the mockery of a human being. But I have to disappoint you: such a rule was put into effect in the Osh sewing factory in Kirghizia. And if this is the case, then there can be no talk of mockery. This is simply a method of emancipating a woman in Central Asia.

The newspaper *Izvestia* (No. 78, 1967) wrote that "the Maoists openly challenged Marxism-Leninism . . . declared the assimilation of non-Chinese peoples as their aim". If this is a "challenge" to Marxism-Leninism, then such learned men as Agayev and Kravtsev should also be considered Maoists. Their "works" are regularly published in Moscow and Kyiv. The former thinks that all languages of the USSR, except Lithuanian, Latvian, Estonian, Georgian and Armenian, have no prospects—that is, they should be Russified. The latter tries to convince Ukrainians that to keep up with the times—means replacing their native language by Russian.

As we see, Mao is not the only author of "capricious caricatures and attempts to discredit the socialist society dreamed about for centuries".

- When a person is tried for a "dangerous way of thinking";
- when dissidents are re-educated through hunger in lock-up rooms;

- when an artist is told what colour paint to use,
- when the UN Declaration of Human Rights is considered a disruptive document, even though it has been ratified by the government;
- when the Ukrainian language is called with impunity the "Banderist* tongue" by official persons;
- when people who are struggling against chauvinistic oppression in Ukraine are put behind bars, at a time when the world is living through an epoch of national revivals—

— all this—is a disgrace to the state that permits such phenomena.

And its peak—is the rule of the descendants of Beria over the spiritual life of society. It is a pitiful society, where problems of philosophy are solved by punitive organs behind barbed wire.

A crime is a crime, and it is inevitably followed by reckoning. Someone will have to answer for those shot and killed by starvation, to answer in accordance with the constitution which sometime will nonetheless become law. And for the robot who can calmly pierce a person with a spear, it will also be necessary to answer—by the one who stole his soul, who sucked a human being out of him.

The truth has long arms!

April 15, 1967.

VOICE OF DESPAIR AND PROTEST

["Revolutionary Voices," OSB Publishing House, Munich 1971]

Editor's note:

Ukrainian newspapers in Western Europe have published a letter from Ukrainian prisoners incarcerated in Camp No. 17 of the Dubravnoye regional administration of the slave labour camps of the Mordovian Autonomous Soviet Socialist Republic. The letter reached the free world in a clandestine manner.

Among the prisoners in the Mordovian camps there are some of the 70 Ukrainian intellectuals arrested and sentenced in Ukraine in 1966, as well as the two other writers, Daniel and Siniavsky.

The letter proves once again that concentration camps continue to exist in the USSR and their inmates are often political prisoners serving long term sentences, people who were made invalids and cripples by long and hard imprisonment. Even if people serve short sentences, the conditions are so severe that they become physically broken after a comparatively short time. The letter proves the continuance of persecution of religion and its adherents. It also proves that the spirit of resistance among Ukrainian patriots remains unbroken.

Below is the full text of the letter.

LETTER FROM UKRAINIAN POLITICAL PRISONERS FROM A SOVIET CONCENTRATION CAMP

"The No. 17 camp of the Dubravnoye Camp Administration is situated in the village of Ozeroye in the Zubova Polyana district of the Mordovian Autonomous Soviet Socialist Republic. It is divided into two zones: in the first, the main one, there are about 700 women convicted for "ordinary" crimes, and in the other there are 276 male political prisoners. Captain Novikov is camp commandant; Captain Annenkov is commandant of the No. 17-A camp section, i.e. of the male zone; Senior-Lieutenant Zabaykin is head of the health department; Captain Ivan Romanovich Krut' is plenipotentiary of the State Security Committee (KGB) for No. 17 camp.

The majority of the male prisoners are invalids. There are 208 second category and 51 third category invalids. There are only two cold and overcrowded barracks in the male zone, with poor ventilation. Food is brought from the female zone and though a prisoner's ration is poor to start with, he does not even receive this meager ration fully. Bread is sour, poorly baked, inedible even for a healthy person, not to speak of sick people who make up a majority of the camp inmates. Medical assistance is in fact absent, which can be seen from the following example: On January 7th, 1967, prisoner Mykhailo Soroka who spent 31 years in Polish and Russian jails (24 of them in Soviet prisons) fell seriously ill. As became evident, he had a heart attack. In such cases qualified medical assistance is urgently necessary. However, a free medical assistant appeared only after 4 days had passed. Only on the seventh day the sick man was taken to the sick bay (until then he

*Stepan Bandera was a Ukrainian nationalist leader, murdered in Munich by Soviet terror apparatus.

was in the barrack). All this time he (Soroka) was under the care of medical assistant Mykola Yevdokimov, a fellow prisoner, experienced but powerless in these circumstances when there are no medicaments or instruments.

In the sick bay there are only 7 beds (for 225 invalids, a majority of whom are aged and seriously ill). There are no medicines and the prisoners have no right to receive them from their relatives (even vitamins, though food is so miserably poor). A dentist is unheard of. Theoretically, those seriously ill should be sent to the central hospital of the Dubravnoye camp administration (No. 3 camp in the village of Barashevo). But this is not always possible, as in Soroka's case, when the sick person cannot be transported (particularly on the terrible roads).

Often, too, dispatch to the central hospital is useless. Thus there have been several cases when doctors sent a prisoner to the central hospital having diagnosed a cancer disease, and doctors from the central hospital instead of freeing the prisoner on the grounds of ill-health (which they are entitled to do), sent him back to the camp with the diagnosis—acute gastritis. And only death and dissection of the body of the deceased confirmed the correctness of the former diagnosis. People are released only in such cases when death comes a few days after release. What better can be expected of people who do not make one step without the instructions of the KGB and the Operations Department.

The decisive voice in the central hospital belongs to the head of the regime, Captain Kitsayev, who discharged Dr. Horboviy from the hospital and sent him back to the camp, although his treatment was far from completed. Similar cases are not rare. The head of the health department Yermeyeva stated in No. 11 camp, during Karavanskyi's hunger strike, that she knew about the hunger strike, but was unable to do anything because there had been no instructions from the Operations Department. The prisoner Ivan Maksym applied for medical treatment to the surgeon in No. 11 camp, but the latter refused even to talk to him, calling him a simulator. This resulted in the prisoner's death. Medical personnel from among the prisoners are not much better. Only people who are in the service of the KGB and Operations Department are taken there. Neither medical education nor knowledge play any role whatsoever. For example, the following medical students, prisoners Yaroslav Hevrych and Dmytro Verkholiak, were dismissed from work in the health department and transferred to general work in a workshop, although there is a shortage of medical workers. At the same time individuals who never had anything to do with medicine, as for example Malykhin and others who are in good books of the KGB and Management Department are working as medical orderlies. If there is an experienced and conscientious senior medical assistant in the No. 17 camp, this is so only because, while working at the central hospital, he was disliked by some of those who have no relation to medicine, and they sent him here to the No. 17 camp.

Altogether No. 17 camp has been created as a punitive camp. Administration does not try to cover it up in conversations, although officially it is not regarded as such. Apart from invalids, people who have not the slightest intention to submit to the so-called educational work among the prisoners and with their example can negatively influence the mass of the prisoners in this direction, have been gathered here. Therefore, a policy of reprisals with regard to the prisoners, is forcefully carried out here. Its aim is to undermine the health of the prisoners and to suppress the slightest symptom of the spirit of insubmission and protest. With this purpose in view the organized production (the sewing of gloves and construction) is based on a system of compulsion, arbitrary punishment and reprisals. Prisoners who work in construction have not been issued with warm special clothing (felt boots and padded clothing). The average temperature in the shop usually stays within the limits between $+5^{\circ}$ and $+9^{\circ}$ centigrade. And on the floor the temperature is usually below the freezing point. Thus there cannot be any talk about normal work in conditions when one has to handle metallic parts of the machine. Nonetheless they demand fulfillment of work quotas from the prisoner, although these cannot be fulfilled even under normal conditions, not to speak of the present situation when equipment is broken, when the premises where the prisoners have to spend nine hours each day (given the 8-hour working day for the prisoners), are not heated.

One hour is allowed for the so-called lunch break and rest, but it is not only no rest, but additional punishment, because people are forced to spend an additional hour in a cold building. Lunch and supper are given in unsanitary conditions, on generally dirty premises, without tables, so that a prisoner is forced to eat at the place of work, i.e. by his machine. There are no facilities for washing one's hands, because one small wash-basin cannot provide enough water for everyone, and

there is no water in the work zone, neither are there any towels. Smoking in the workshop and in the passage is forbidden. And as there is no place provided where one could smoke, prisoners are compelled to smoke in a small corridor leading to the street, where doors are constantly opened and there is constant draught (with 30° centigrade of frost.)

The administration constantly threatens with reprisals against those who fail to fulfil the norms (and at present no one is able to fulfil the norm), and will carry out these threats as soon as the period of training ends (at the beginning of February 1967). As there is a shortage of manpower, because second category invalids are entitled to stay off work, the administration openly declares that it will set up a local medical committee with the purpose of taking away the rights of invalids from the disabled persons and forcing them to work. Camp commandant, Capt. Annenkov, has said it openly.

The point is that up to now this was a camp for female political prisoners (until 29th December, 1966, i.e. to the date of our arrival) most of whom were women sentenced for their religious convictions, that is people who less than anyone else had been able to put up resistance to the arbitrariness of the camp administration, or even to protest against the oppression. It must also be added that—in an overwhelming majority—these were elderly women. As the overlookers say, they were exhausted beings, clad in rags, who were forced to work in cold premises where temperature rarely rose to 2-3 degrees above the freezing point, and often fell below the freezing point even. As the system of oppression has become a tradition here, the administration has the intention to continue it in the future, too. No wonder that the overlookers are frankly saying that the more we complain against the infringement of our unlawful rights by them, the more they are praised by their superiors and vice versa.

Have the prisoners tried to complain against these numerous infringements, reprisals and injustice? They have, and have done so many a time, but without any effect. The camp commandant, Capt. Annenkov, replied with shouts that things would remain as they were. Chief engineer replied to the complaint that we are compelled to consume our food in cold premises, in unhygienic conditions, that this was none of his concern and advises us to address similar questions to "Ivan the Wind". After many complaints a medical inspector came from the health department of the Dubravnoye Camp Administration, who, in the first place, did not believe that temperature in the shop was too low (he did not agree to its being measured on the spot), stating that "norms had always been fulfilled and over-fulfilled here". After we mentioned that we had recently sent a number of complaints signed by the shift master (a free man), dealing with the temperature in the workshop, he merely enquired to whom these complaints were addressed, and was dissatisfied that they were addressed to the Attorney General's Office and not the Camp Administration.

As regards the complaint by the writer Daniel about the outrageous case of the sick man, M. Soroka, this medical inspector stated that this was no longer a topical question (the sick man did not die when he did not receive medical treatment) and tried to make Daniel recognise that everything in the camp was in order (which he needed for formally dismissing the matter), to which the latter did not agree. No wonder that when the prisoners demand what is due to them according to the law, representatives of the administration do not bother to do anything and simply reply: "You may complain," because they know that no one will pay the slightest attention to our complaints. To whom is one to complain when our former "educators" sit in the offices of higher authority? The following fact may bear witness to their standards of behaviour. For two or three years the former operations manager from camp No. 19 was acting as a doctor at the No. 7 camp. He was dismissed from his job in camp No. 19 for an attempt to violate a nurse. At present he is employed as duty officer at the prison in the town of Ruzayevka in Mordovia. At present, Senior Lieutenant Nekrasov is in charge of the guard detachment at camp No. 1. Previously he was a medical assistant in the same camp. Supervision by attorneys is the same as that by doctors (attorneys very often change their seats from those of law officers to camp commandants, officials of the administration, and vice versa, as happened with our present deputy head of the Dubravnoye Camp Administration, Nekachan).

Mention was made already of correspondence and parcels. I wish to add that permission to receive packets with printed matter which we are lawfully permitted to receive—depends (just as letters) on the will of the KGB functionary (in the given case, Capt. Krut'), which makes our right illusory.

Representatives of various nations of the Soviet Union are held in the camp. There are Latvians, Lithuanians, Estonians, Russians. As could well have been expected, there are a great many Ukrainians.

Who are they?

(There follows a list of Ukrainian prisoners whom the author (or authors) of the letter segregate into the following groups: "participants in the national liberation struggle 1942-1954, as well as various clandestine groups of a similar character"; "those sentenced for their religious convictions (Catholics, Baptists, Jehovah's Witnesses, etc.)"; "those sentenced for the so-called anti-Soviet agitation, for an attempt to cross the frontier and similar crimes"; "for crimes committed during the war". The list gives: the prisoner's surname and name, region, year of birth, when arrested, sentence in years. There are altogether 114 names. Obviously this list does not contain all the Ukrainian prisoners of No. 17-A camp, because at the end of some groups there is "and others".)

Although all the listed Ukrainians have been sentenced by the courts of the Ukrainian Soviet Socialist Republic, they are held (and have always been held) in the camps of Russia. This is another superfluous proof of the abdication of the Ukrainian Soviet Socialist Republic from its sovereignty—the carrying out of the sentence of its courts.

There are only 17 people of the working category, i.e. people able to work, in the camp.

The head of the Dubravnoye Camp Administration is Colonel Gromov, notorious for his arbitrariness in the 40's and 50's in Kamyshlag (Kemerovo region) (West Siberia—Ed.).

The head of the KGB Department at the Dubravnoye Camp Administration is Lieut.-Col. Blinov.

THE CASE OF THE BALTIC FLEET OFFICERS

["Uncensored Russia," Peter Reddaway. American Heritage Press, New York, 1972]

The time has come for the party to look people in the eye and revise its ways. If, however, all our methods of struggle give no positive result, then time will present the task of creating a new party, which, after a prolonged ideological struggle, will lead a socialist society to the triumph of Reason, Justice and Humanism, and enable Intellectual Freedom to flourish in our country. . . Russia is waiting for new people.

GENNADY GAVRILOV,
September 1968.

Without doubt this chapter contains some of the most dramatic material in the Chronicle. The material is also of the greatest importance for gaining a clear view of some of the Democratic Movement's more radical components. But, tantalizingly, there is not yet enough of it. While it conjures up vivid images, their edges are blurred and they have yet to come fully into focus.

One thing, however, is clear: Grigorenko and Altunyan are not isolated cases of military involvement in the Democratic Movement. Baltic Fleet Officers, linked with civilians and apparently operating mainly from Tallinn, the capital of Estonia, have injected a vigorous strain of their own constructive thought into the movement. Whether this will lead eventually to a top-level military involvement in politics, possibly one day a take-over, is too early to say. Such traditions are weak in Russia: the Decembrist officers were an exception in 1825. Nevertheless, the general phenomenon of army take-overs has spread through so much of the last two decades that the eventual infection of the Soviet military can by no means be ruled out. Who knows, indeed, whether Lieutenant Ilin, who apparently tried to assassinate the top party leaders in January 1969, represented only himself? Or did he come, as rumour had it, from some army group prepared—unlike the naval officers—to use terrorism in the tradition of the People's Will, the group which killed Alexander II in 1881?

The first indication that things were brewing in Tallinn came when two documents reached the West at the end of 1968. The first concerned the well-known essay by Academician Sakharov [not printed here], which he had circulated in final form in the summer. It was signed 'Numerous representatives of the technical intelligentsia of Estonia', a formula which left open the possibility—a likely one—that both Estonians and non-Estonians, both civilians and military people, were involved. The Chronicle reported:

Sakharov's study has evoked a response from representatives of the technical intelligentsia of Estonia. In an article entitled 'To Hope or to Act?' they maintain that Sakharov 'puts too much faith in scientific and technical means, in economic measures, in the goodwill of those who control society, and in people's common sense', and that 'the root causes he sees and the remedies he advocates are external, material ones, while the inner, spiritual, political and organic ones are ignored'. The article says that what we need most of all is a moral revival of society, since, 'having destroyed Christian values, the materialist ideology has not created new ones'. This has given rise to a society in which solidarity is an external, mechanical thing, and one which is actually based on socially alienated individuals who are fearful of their neighbours and feel insignificant and lonely before the state machine. New moral values are essential. The authors of the article demand not only intellectual freedom, but also political freedom, real democracy and a renunciation of the doctrine of militant, aggressive communism in foreign policy. The authors of the article conclude that the 'leading minds of our society' should apply themselves to working out new social, political and economic ideals.

This was a call for a political programme. The document had, moreover, put forward ideas somewhat more radical than the Chronicle's summary would suggest. Written soon after the Czechoslovak occupation, it warned: 'For twelve years already, since the 20th party congress, we have waited and asked our leadership for liberating reforms. We are prepared to ask and wait for a certain time longer. But eventually we will demand and act! And then tank divisions will have to be sent not into Prague and Bratislava, but rather into Moscow and Leningrad!'

As for foreign policy, "was it not our country which 'joined' to itself, in the period 1939-49, 700,000 square kilometers of territory . . . ? We must give up the senseless accumulation of territory, the expansion of our great-power might, and our aggressive policies . . . Since not just half but the greater part of the responsibility for the tension in the world lies with us, it is we who must make the first and biggest moves towards reconciliation."

The second document—an 'Open Letter to the Citizens of the Soviet Union' dated September 1968 and signed 'Gennady Alekseyev, communist'—made various similar points from a more Marxist position, and provides the epigraph to this chapter.

Then, in October 1969, the Chronicle reported the appearance in samizdat of the 'Programme of the Democrats of Russia, the Ukraine and the Baltic Lands':

This document gives an exhaustive analysis of the world revolutionary movement, the world national liberation movement, and the ideological state of the world. The positive programme set out in this document is extremely interesting.

Now written on this document is a second title: "Programme of the Democratic Movement of the Soviet Union". Maybe, therefore, in order to distance itself from this programme, and perhaps also to discourage particular groups from writing in the name of the movement as a whole, the Chronicle quickly added this note:

The tenth issue of the Chronicle gave a brief account of the "Programme [of the Democrats of Russia, the Ukraine and the Baltic Lands]". This account must be considered unsatisfactory. The analysis of the contemporary international situation and the socio-political picture of the world presented in the programme cannot of course be considered "exhaustive", as the tenth issue of the Chronicle rashly stated. The words "exhaustive analysis" smack of dogmatism. The problems of the modern world are inexhaustible in their variety and complexity, and they certainly cannot be exhausted by any one programme. The programme expresses the views only of a certain group of people.

Mostly likely, we may conclude, this perhaps small group wanted to circulate its programme under a rather presumptuous title precisely in order to stimulate debate and find out how acceptable it was to wider circles.

But which people made up this anonymous group, the only effectively underground one linked with the Democratic Movement? It seems likely that they were connected, either directly or indirectly, with the authors of the two earlier documents. For the programme—a long, 20,000-word work—develops in detail, often using similar terminology, the ideas of those documents. The mention of "the Baltic lands" is also suggestive. It was, in any case, the asked-for programme.

The latter is, unfortunately, too long to analyse here. But let us just note a few points: first, its militancy. One example of this is its epigraph, an unusual quotation from Alexander Herzen. It reads: 'Socialism will give rise in all its phases to extreme consequences, to stupidities. Then once again a cry of renunciation will burst forth from the titanic breast of the revolutionary minority, and once again a deadly struggle will begin, in which socialism will occupy the place of today's conservatism and will be conquered by an advancing revolution of which we do not know.' Secondly we should note the Programme's tendency to praise Western democracy, sometimes to the point of idealization. The authors—it appears to be the joint work of people who have specially researched different parts of it—come out clearly for a mixed economy not all that different in nature from the capitalist economies of Western Europe. This marks them off from almost all the other tendencies in the Democratic Movement, which in the rare cases when they discuss economics in depth, usually prefer various forms of market socialism. What also mark the group off are its evident exaggeration of the Movement's strength and its advocacy of underground as well as legal methods of struggle. In reviewing its two substantial documents of 1970 the Chronicle criticized it severely on these points, waiving its usual ban on value judgments.

Now, while bearing in mind that the Programme's authors quite possibly had no direct links with the Baltic Fleet officers arrested in 1969, we can pass to the Chronicle's coverage of their case. Despite the apparent inaccuracy of this coverage in one or two places, it is all presented here in the original sequences:

According to unconfirmed rumours, a number of officers of the Baltic Fleet have been arrested in Tallinn, Leningrad and Kaliningrad. Rumours suggest that the arrests were made in connection with the distribution of a letter by Alekseyev, addressed to the citizens of the Soviet Union, about the invasion of Czechoslovakia.

The report that the arrests of officers of the Baltic Fleet were connected with the letter by Alekseyev has been confirmed. The letter was a protest against the sending of troops into Czechoslovakia. According to information received, thirty-one people have been arrested in Estonia, not all of them officers. For example,

in Tallinn an engineer, Sergei Soldatov, was arrested.* About a quarter of those arrested are Estonians. Although rumours, possibly spread by official circles, say that those arrested are members of a nationalist movement, materials circulating at present in Russian and Estonian *samizdat* are convincing proof that the opinions of the arrested people are generally democratic and anti-Stalinist, and that their demand for equal national rights is a logical part of their general system of thought. One of the arrested is a coastguard officer of the Baltic Fleet, Alekseyev.

ARRESTS OF OFFICERS OF THE BALTIC FLEET

Following inexact and partially contradictory reports of arrests of Baltic Fleet officers, the *Chronicle* is now publishing accurate information.

In May 1969 the naval officers Gavrillov, Kosyrev and Paramonov were arrested in Paldiski, a town near Tallinn, and in Kaliningrad [on the Baltic coast near Poland]. They are accused of founding a 'Union to Struggle for Political Rights', the aim of which was the realization in the U.S.S.R. of the democratic rights and freedoms guaranteed by the Universal Declaration of Human Rights. It is reported that during searches K.G.B. officials found a printing press intended for the publication of uncensored literature.

The investigation is being conducted by the K.G.B. organs of the Baltic Fleet. The investigators—Captain Bodunov, Major Drach and Colonel Denisenko—are officials of the K.G.B. and the Baltic Fleet Military Procuracy. The Procurator supervising the investigation is Kolesnikov.

The K.G.B. investigation organs are attributing the leading role and the 'Open Letter to the Citizens of the Soviet Union', signed by G. Alekseyev, a pseudonym, to Gavrillov. As far as can be ascertained, Gavrillov is holding firmly to his principles during investigation. Thanks to the testimony of Kosyrev, the K.G.B. have evidently reached the conclusion that the arrested men have connections with Leningrad, Moscow, Tallinn, Riga, Baku, Perm and Khabarovsk. It appears that Paramonov too is giving the investigators helpful testimony. The investigators are intent on discovering whether the arrested men had any connection with Ilya Gabai, who was arrested in Moscow in May 1969, and also with those citizens who have signed protests against violations of human rights in the U.S.S.R. The arrested officers are at present in the K.G.B. prison in Tallinn.

The unique documents in the next item presumably reached the Chronicle through either a leak or a blunder in the K.G.B.:

THE INVESTIGATION INTO THE CASE OF NAVAL OFFICER G. V. GAVRILOV AND OTHERS CONTINUES

On June 20th, 1969, a K.G.B. detective squad searched the flat of S. I. Soldatov in Tallinn. The search warrant, signed by Captain Bodunov, a senior investigator, indicated that citizen Olga Bondarenko had testified that Soldatov had been meeting a stranger in her flat. Confiscated during the search were personal correspondence with the Soviet writer V. M. Pomerantsev, the Declaration of Human Rights, poems called "Dream of Freedom" and "On the Death of Kennedy", extracts copied from *Confessions* of J. Rousseau, and a *samizdat* philosophical manuscript, *Man and the World*.

First interrogation. June 24th, 1969. In the Estonian K.G.B. headquarters, Pagari Street 2 [Tallinn], senior investigator A. Nikitin.

INVESTIGATOR. We should like to question you . . . *for the moment* as a witness.

SOLDATOV. In connection with which case am I being questioned?

INVESTIGATOR. You are being questioned in connection with the case of Gennady Vladimirovich Gavrillov and a group of Baltic Fleet officers charged with anti-Soviet activities. Are you often in Moscow?

SOLDATOV. That is irrelevant to the case under investigation.

INVESTIGATOR. Are you acquainted with Yakir?

SOLDATOV. I wish to state that I am not prepared to give you any information about my acquaintances or my spiritual life.

(There follows a lengthy explanation about how refusal to testify can be a criminal offence.)

SOLDATOV. If you have any material evidence against me, lock me up without my collaboration.

*Modification in No. 10: "It turns out that Soldatov has been forcibly interned in a psychiatric hospital."

INVESTIGATOR. We have a lot of evidence against you. You have had connections with these officers. We know that for certain.

SOLDATOV. Then draw up an indictment on the basis of that evidence.

(Soldatov is taken into another office.)

COLONEL BARKOV. You aren't an enemy of Soviet power?

SOLDATOV. I am an enemy of lawlessness.

BARKOV. Then why don't you assist the investigation, and confirm what is obvious? We know for sure that the accused Gavrillov got your address from Yakir and has been meeting you. Your obstinate refusal only increases our suspicions. Evidently you have some anti-Soviet peccadillos on your conscience and feel uncomfortable . . .

SOLDATOV. I've already said 'Lock me up without my help.'

BARKOV. We once interrogated and released a young man who had written an anti-Soviet poem. Later he started asking us to lock him up, if only for a year. Your vanity evidently makes you, too, aspire to appear a martyr.

SOLDATOV. I simply want to live my life as an honest man.

BARKOV. Then how are we to understand your attitude to Soviet law?

SOLDATOV. Those laws are themselves imperfect and frequently conflict with human rights.

BARKOV. But Solon said: 'If laws are imperfect, then let the lawgiver's error be forgiven.' Think what sort of position you will put the worthy Captain Bondarenko in. After all, his daughter confirms that you have met the officers in her flat.

SOLDATOV. That's a matter for her conscience. I know what I myself am talking about.

BARKOV. Think of the fate of these young officers. One of them is already completely beyond your help, but you could ease the position of another of them . . .

SOLDATOV. I can't ease anyone's fate by going against my conscience.

BARKOV. Now that's simply cruel. How can you talk about human rights and struggle for them after saying that . . .

SOLDATOV. Well, then, I will confirm just the evidence of Bondarenko's daughter and the officers—if that will save someone.

(Soldatov confirms that he had met someone; he cannot remember the time, place, appearance or names; the conversation was on general topics and he had noticed nothing illegal.)

BARKOV. Why didn't you invite this person to your home?

SOLDATOV. My wife doesn't like having strangers in.

BARKOV. Did they give you any documents? Did they discuss with you the foundation of a 'Union of Fighters for Political Freedom' and the publication of a newspaper called the *Democrat*? Did you promise to get hold of type-metal? Do you know a document called 'To Hope or to Act'?

(Soldatov answers each question in the negative.)

BARKOV. What is your political credo?

SOLDATOV. The government is obliged to listen to the opinions of dissenters, for the democratic intelligentsia, and to implement democratic freedoms, which it is not doing. (Signs record of interrogation.)

BARKOV. Whether you like it or not, the question of your relations with Yakir will inevitably be brought into the open.

SOLDATOV. That won't change my position.

BARKOV. You're evidently dissatisfied with our policy in Czechoslovakia?

SOLDATOV. I'm not thrilled to bits by it.

BARKOV. You'd like West Germany to send its troops there?

SOLDATOV. I would prefer not to have this sort of argument in a K.G.B. office. Goodbye.

Second interrogation. June 28th, 1969. In the Estonian K.G.B. headquarters, senior investigator A. Nikitin.

NIKITIN. What can you say about the letter to the party Central Committee signed by you and your comrades at the Leningrad Polytechnic Institute?

SOLDATOV. Only that the answer we got to it didn't satisfy us.

NIKITIN. Where did you get the exercise-book containing political notes?

SOLDATOV. I found it in a lecture-hall and kept it.

NIKITIN. Where did you get the *samizdat* philosophical manuscript?

SOLDATOV. I don't remember.

NIKITIN. Where did you get the poems 'Dread of Freedom' and 'On the Death of Kennedy'?

SOLDATOV. I refuse to answer.

NIKITIN. How did your correspondence with the writer Pomerantsev begin? Is he your friend?

SOLDATOV. Just an acquaintance. It was on my initiative. I have no other information to give. I protest against the illegal confiscation from me of materials not relevant to the case, including the Declaration of Human Rights.

NIKITIN. Address your protest to the Special Department of the Baltic Fleet. It's their instructions we're carrying out.

SOLDATOV. I am a civilian. My documents are irrelevant to the case of these officers.

NIKITIN. We decide whether they are relevant or not.

SOLDATOV. That's where the arbitrariness starts. Article 140 of the Russian Code of Criminal Procedure has been violated.

NIKITIN. But that sort of thing happened in the past. Things are different now.

SOLDATOV. What about the arrest of people for their beliefs, the confinement of healthy people in psychiatric hospitals?

NIKITIN. That question is decided by medical experts, not by us. We even help ex-political prisoners to find work.

SOLDATOV. Your charitable activities stare us in the face.

NIKITIN. We sent a couple of b——s to prison, and you're up in arms, kicking up a fuss for all the world to hear. What about the country's prestige? (A reference to Daniel and Sinyavsky.)

SOLDATOV. It's a question not of the nation but of principle. It's a matter of freedom of speech and artistic expression. Besides, one person who fights boldly for freedom is worth more than a million cowardly nonentities.

NIKITIN. Well that's as may be. It's all very abstract. But I still hope that you'll change your negative attitude to the K.G.B.

SOLDATOV. Even if you managed to convince me that you are observing legality at the moment, who will give a guarantee for the future?

NIKITIN. Of course, if the international situation becomes tenser, we will take steps against those who have been shooting at us(??).

(SOLDATOV signs an order forbidding him to leave Tallinn.)

Third interrogation. September 3rd, 1969. In the Special Department of the K.G.B. for the Baltic Fleet, Toompea Street 8, senior investigator Captain Bodunov.

BODUNOV. We are not satisfied with your evidence to the Estonian K.G.B. I hope you've seen sense.

(The records of the interrogation of the accused A. V. Kosyrev are now quoted: 'I asked him (Soldatov) to assist in the establishment of a "Union of Fighters for Political Freedom" and in the publication of a paper, the *Democrat*, to which he very willingly agreed . . . He also agreed to get hold of type-metal . . . His telephone number was obtained from Yakir . . .')

BODUNOV. What have you to say about that?

SOLDATOV. I can't remember any such conversation. We talked about general subjects.

BODUNOV. Have you known Yakir long?

SOLDATOV. Why are you so persistently interested in Yakir? As far as I know, he is a universally respected citizen who in legal ways defends human rights.

BODUNOV. But his personal friend I. Gabai has been arrested. I had a word with the investigator who interrogated him.* So he's not involved only in legal affairs.

SOLDATOV. I have nothing to say on that score. It's not clear why Kosyrev needed to meet me.

BODUNOV. He saw in you a fighter.

SOLDATOV. I hadn't deserved that.

BODUNOV. Right, wait in the next room.

(There follows a confrontation and an identification procedure, in the course of which Kosyrev identifies Soldatov and confirms his evidence about their conversation.)

BODUNOV (to Soldatov). What have you to say to that?

SOLDATOV. I consider the base and cowardly conduct of Kosyrev unworthy of an officer.

BODUNOV (slapping his hand on the table). I will not stand for any insinuations. You are sitting on a powder-keg which may explode at any moment.

* The investigation of Gabai's case was carried out by senior investigator B. I. Berezowsky of the Uzbek Procuracy [*Chronicle's* note—pp. 136-40].

SOLDATOV (to Kosyrev). There exists the K.G.B.'s court, and also the court of your comrades and of history. To *that* court you will have to answer your whole life long.

BODUNOV. There's no 'K.G.B. court', only the Soviet People's Court.

SOLDATOV. There's also the court of conscience. It is important to remain honest in all circumstances.

BODUNOV. You and your honest conduct won't be strolling around freely much longer.

SOLDATOV. Experience shows that honest people have frequently lost their freedom and become political prisoners. Then they have been rehabilitated. I'd rather be rehabilitated than a swine and free . . . I request the opportunity to speak at the trial.

BODUNOV. Why?

SOLDATOV. In order to express my opinion about this case.

BODUNOV. In whose name? Who has authorized you? A Komsomol or trade union organization?

SOLDATOV. In the name of the democratic intelligentsia.

Fourth interrogation. In the Special Department of the Baltic Fleet, September 4th, 1969. Senior investigator Bodunov. (Confrontation with G. V. Gavrillov, the chief accused. Gavrillov does not recognize Soldatov.)

SOLDATOV. I demand to be allowed to take part in the coming trial.

BODUNOV. There is nothing for you to do there. You aren't helping in the search for the truth.

SOLDATOV (to Gavrillov). My name is . . . (gives his names). Remember that I shall always be glad to meet you. How can I help?

GAVRILOV. Perhaps we *will* meet. There's nothing I need.

Fifth interrogation. September 23rd, 1969. (Soldatov has been summoned to the Special Department of the Baltic Fleet, where he is awaited by K.G.B. Major Tikhonov and three men in white coats, headed by military doctor Petrenko. They turn out to be doctors from the Republic Psychiatric Hospital. The examination proceeds as follows:

'Were your parents ever sick?'—'No.'

'Are you an only child?'—'Yes.'

'Did you start school at the normal age?'—'Yes.'

'What were you keen on at school?'—'Mathematics and sports.'

'Did you aspire to be a leader?'—'No.'

'Why did you leave secondary school at the age of eighteen instead of nineteen?'—'The war.'

'Why did you choose mechanical engineering?'—'I liked it.'

'Did you do well in your examinations?'—'Yes.'

'How did you choose your friends?'—'For their honesty and intelligence.'

'Why did you move to a different factory?'—'I changed my line.'

'Don't your work-mates envy you?'—'No.'

'What are your relations with your work-group?'—'Perfectly correct.'

'Ah, only "correct". Why not warm?'—'One can't make friends to order.'

'Don't you think you could make a technical breakthrough?'—'No.'

'Are your parents hard-hearted towards you?'—'No.'

'What made you marry your wife?'—'I liked her.'

'Have you ever had experience of unrequited love?'—'Yes.'

'Do you confide your views to your wife?'—'She judges me by what I do.'

'Is your wife content with you?'—'Ask her. Pick your questions more carefully.'

'Do you feel that life is hard and people are hard on you?'—'No.'

'Do you believe in the supernatural? In the hereafter?'—'Those are controversial questions.'

'Your favorite authors are . . . ?'—'Zweig, Dickens, Tolstoy.'

'Have you ever been to church?'—'I have.'

'When did you become interested in religious and moral problems?'—'When I learned to think.'

'Why are you interested in them?'—'Not everything in life is as it should be.'

'Why do you like Tolstoy?'—'He explores problems of human existence.'

'Your attitude to military service?'—'I haven't yet adopted a definite attitude to it, because it's peacetime.'

'What do you think of *Man and the World*, the manuscript found at your flat?'—'There's a lot I can't understand.'

'Where did you get it from?'—'From acquaintances.'

'What is your attitude to the sending of troops into Czechoslovakia?'—'Negative.'

'How should the question be settled?'—'Peacefully.'
'You wouldn't like to head a delegation at negotiations?'—'I'm not qualified in politics.'
'What do you think of Soviet policy?'—'To make an analysis you need information from both sides. I haven't got that.'
'Don't you consider yourself able to change the Soviet political system?'—'History is made by the masses.'
'Why have we gathered here for this conversation?'—'The K.G.B. is worried about my health.'
'Why is the K.G.B. interested in you?'—'Because of my inconvenient views and undesirable acquaintanceships.'
'Don't summonses to the K.G.B. embitter you?'—'I've got used to them.'
'Does the present situation embitter you?'—'At the moment I feel ashamed for the medical profession.'
'Have you ever had bumps on your head?'—'Yes, lots.'
'Why do you have that ironic smile all the time?'—'I'm enjoying this solemn ritual. It reveals your powerlessness.'

In early 1970 Soldatov was, despite his attempted self-defence through the courts, dismissed from his job, and two unnamed officers were arrested in Poland in connection with the Gavrilov case. In June Gavrilov, aged thirty-one was sentenced by a Leningrad military tribunal to six years in strict-regime camps, and Aleksei Vasilevich Kosyrev, twenty-eight, to two years. Georgy Konstantinovich Paramonov was consigned to the Chernyakhovsk prison hospital. The charges, under articles 70 and 72, concerned the formation by these naval engineer officers of a 'Union to Struggle for Political Rights'.

TWENTY YEARS FOR THE "SINS" OF THEIR FATHERS

Yury Shukhevich, the son of a general in the Ukrainian resistance, was sentenced to indefinite imprisonment at age fourteen, not because of anything he himself had done but simply because he was the son of his father. The same fate befell Pyotr Yakir, the son of a Jewish general executed by Stalin. Both men were released after serving twenty years in the camps. Both men are now back in the camp because of their continuing opposition to the Communist dictatorship.



Yury Shukhevich



Pyotr Yakir

THE CASE OF YURI GALANSKOV

The pathetic appeal addressed to the United Nations by Yuri Galanskov prior to his death in the camps in January 1973 appears on page 120 of the hearing. At the left top is a photo of Galanskov taken prior to his arrest. At the right top is another photo taken in prison. The photograph below shows Galanskov's injured wife, Olga, being carried from the trial of her husband by Pavel Litvinov (left) and Alexander Daniel (right), January 12th, 1968.



Yuri Galanskov



Yuri Galanskov



Wife, Olga Galanskov



Anatoly Marchenko
Author of "My Testimony"



Vladimir Bukovsky
Now serving twelve years for smuggling out documents on the
abuse of psychiatry for political terror

LEADERS OF THE SOVIET RESISTANCE



General Pyotr Grigorenko
Now fraudulently confined to a mental
institution



Dr. Alexander Trusnnovich
NTS leader kidnapped from Berlin by
Soviet agents



Ilya Bokshstein
See story on page 150



Natalya Gorbanevskaya
Russian poetess and resistance leader,
released from fraudulent mental
confinement last year—with a
chemically altered personality

IMPRISONED LEADERS OF THE SOCIAL CHRISTIAN RESISTANCE



Igor Igurtsov



Boris Talantov



Leonid Borodin



Levitin-Krasnov



Vyacheslav Platonov



Mikhail Sado

IMPRISONED JEWISH RESISTANCE LEADERS



Volf Zalmanson



Silva Zalmanson



Israel Zalmanson



Leib Khnokh

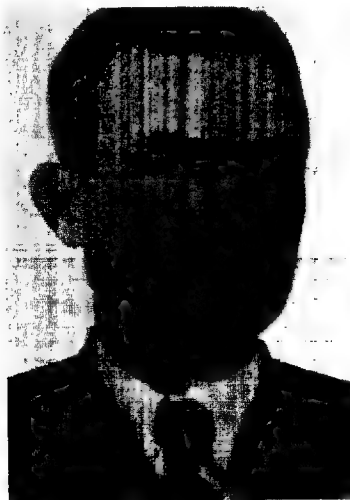


Vladimir Kukui



Aleksandr Galperin

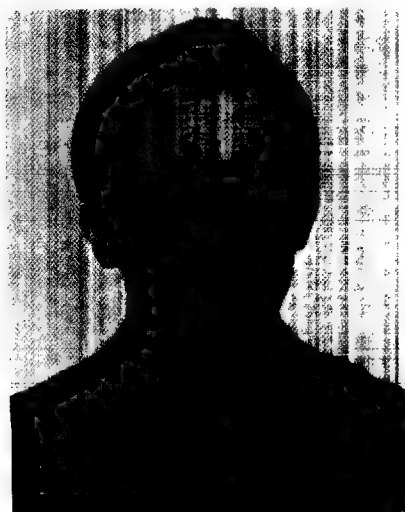
IMPRISONED UKRAINIAN RESISTANCE LEADERS



Svyatoslav Karavansky



Valentyn Moroz



Vyacheslav Chornovil



Ivan Dzyuba



Boris Penson: "Self-Portrait"

I N D E X

EDITORIAL NOTE: There are several accepted ways of translating names from Russian and Ukrainian into English. The *New York Times*, and most American newspapers, for example, will render the *ee* sound which terminates many Russian names with the "y". Library of Congress translators, however, following the Library of Congress style, use the letters "iy" to reproduce the same sound. The *New York Times* uses the letter "i" to reproduce the soft "i" sound in Russian. The Library of Congress reproduces the soft "i" with "I". And so on through a whole series of differences in spelling, which nevertheless result in virtually identical pronunciations in English.

There will be differences, too, between transliteration of names and place names from Ukrainian into English by competent Ukrainian-English translators, and transliterations of the same names by competent Russian-English translators. For example, "Kiev" is the Russian-English transliteration and "Kiiv" the Ukrainian-English transliteration for the same city in the Ukraine.

Because the texts incorporated in this testimony come from several different sources, the spelling will vary according to the source. In general in this index we have followed the procedure of listing names under the dominant Russian transliteration. Although the spellings may vary slightly from one portion of the text to another, the reader should have no difficulty in recognizing the names because of the virtual uniformity of pronunciation.

(NOTE.—The Senate Internal Security Subcommittee attaches no significance to the mere fact of the appearance of the name of an individual or organization in this index.)

A	Page
Abakum	183
Abwehr	183
Action Group for the Defense of Civil Rights in the U.S.S.R.	20
Afanasev, Captain	190
Agayev	263
Akhmatova, Raisa Salgimuradovna	186
Akimova, L. S.	157, 158, 199, 200
Aleksandrovich, Aleksandr	179-181, 184
Alekseyev, Gennady	269, 270
Alekseyeva, Lyudmila	192
Aleshka	179
Alexandrovich, Isaac	225
Alexandrovich, Rivka	225
Alexandrovich, Ruta Isaacovna	225
Alexeeva, Valentina Ivanovna	204, 205, 210, 217, 221
All-Russian Social Christian Union for the Liberation of the People	147, 148, 150, 151, 177
Altman, Anatoly	230, 232, 233
Altunyan	268
American Heritage Press	176, 197, 268
AMI (Association of Israeli Youth)	156
Anakhashiyev	183
Annenkov, Captain	167, 168, 264, 266
Antonenko	247
Antonov, O.	244
Arbuzov, Colonel	182
Arkadyj, Voloshin	238
Armavir Prison	160
Austria	154

Averbuch, Ruth Aleksandrovich	Page
Averochkin, Boris Anatolevich	238
Avvakum	151, 176, 181
Aydov, Vyacheslav	191
	153

B

Babitskiy, Konstantin	192, 193
Balaban, F. A.	205
Baptists	201-203, 205
Baranov, Yuriy Petrovich	138, 147, 177, 181
Barkov, Colonel	271
Belik, Igor Vasilyevich	185
Belinskiy	190
Bell, The (magazine)	153, 154
Belgorodskaya, Irina	147, 152, 191, 192, 200
Berdyayev	176
Berezowsky, B. I.	272
Berg-Khaymovich, Yakov	153, 184, 185
Bergs	243
Beria	160, 171, 178, 181, 183, 259
Biriukov	192
Blinov, Colonel	169, 267
Blums, Biruta	174
Bochevarov, Georgiy Nikolayevich	147, 177, 179, 181, 187, 189, 190
Bodunov, Captain	270, 272, 273
Bogach, Nikolay Pavlovich	149
Bogoraz-Burkhman, Larisa Iosifovna	147, 151
Boguslavsky, Victor	233
Bokshtein, Ilya Veniaminovich	150, 278
Boldyreff, Constantin	129-145
Bondarenko, Captain	215, 271
Bondarenko, Olga	270
Borisovich, Mikhail	190
Borisovich, Solomon	190
Borodin, Leonid Ivanovich	150, 177, 178, 181, 182, 186, 189, 191
Borushko, Grigori Grigorievich	204, 205, 211, 212, 214, 215, 218, 219, 221
Brezhnev, L. I.	144, 162, 163, 189, 196, 201, 216
Brindt	237
Budapest	137
Bukovsky, Vladimir	148, 277
Bunin	191
Burkov	241, 242
Burmistrovich, Ilya Evseevich	148, 192
Buryak (nickname: Hitler)	135, 138
Butman	195
Butyrki Prison	158, 178, 200
Butyrskaya Prison	133, 134, 152, 154
Buzin, Yury	177
Buzyreva, N. V.	225
Byazrov, Fedir	260
Bychkov, General	171, 172, 174

C

Central Investigation Confinement Center	189
Chautzis	237
Cheka (secret police)	155, 182, 185-187
Chelvabinsk	132, 134
Cherdyntsev, Ivan Alekseevich	149, 191
Cherdyntsev, Vania	190
Cherdyntseva, Efrosiniya Nesterovna	149
Cherenkov, Ivan Nikolayevich	183
Chernoglaz, Bronya	161
Chernoglas, David	230, 233, 234

	Page
Chernomorskaya Kommuna (newspaper).....	218
Chernyakhovsk Prison Hospital.....	274
Cheshkov, M.....	151
China.....	134, 144
Chinese "Red Guards".....	262, 263
Chornomorska Komuna (newspaper).....	245
Chornovil, Viacheslav.....	244, 245, 253, 281
"Chronicle" (publicaiton).....	149, 177, 178, 197-199, 201-204, 268, 270, 272
Chuprynka, General.....	241
Churchill.....	183, 263
Communist Party (22d Congress).....	140
Cuba.....	129, 143-145
Czechoslovakia.....	136, 144, 147, 151, 152, 192, 256, 269, 271, 273

D

Daniel-Bogoraz, Larisa.....	152, 192, 201, 202
Daniel, Mark.....	151
Daniel, Yuliy Markovich.....	151, 153, 154, 168, 186, 190, 192, 264, 266
Delone, V.....	148
Democrat (newspaper).....	271, 272
Denisenko, Colonel.....	270
Derunov, Mikhail Evgenevich.....	179, 180, 182
Deyneka, Mykola.....	203
Diane Books.....	204
Djilas.....	176
Dobrovolskiy, A.....	147, 148, 150
Doctors' Plot.....	133
Dolghish, General.....	171, 172
Dolnik, Solomon Borisovich.....	147, 188, 189
Dorozhiyev, Erdni Batiyevich.....	183
Dostoyevskiy.....	182, 190, 191
Drach, Maj. I.....	244, 270
Dragosh, Nikolay Federovich.....	153, 154, 189, 191
Dreisner, Lila.....	161
Dreisner, Solomon.....	232
Dubovenko, B.....	200
Dubrovlag.....	147-149, 154, 156
Dutton, E. P., and Co.....	222
Dymshits.....	140, 150, 161, 194-196
Dzhzhkazan.....	174
Dzyuba, Ivan.....	262, 281

E

England.....	141
Ermogen, Archbishop.....	202
Ershov, Lieutenant.....	183, 184, 190
Eshlman, Nikolai.....	200

F

Fadeyev, Aleksandr.....	183
Fatkin, Colonel.....	156
Fedorovich, Vladimir.....	181, 182
Fedorov, Yuriy Ivanovich.....	140, 149, 188, 189, 191, 195, 225, 230, 232, 233
Filaret, Metropolitan.....	203
Filatov.....	218
Florida.....	145
Fomchenko.....	241, 242
Forsel, Vilho.....	263
France.....	136, 141
Franko, Ivan.....	251
Fraternal Leaflet (publication).....	208, 210
Free Russian-German Friendship Union.....	155
Friedland.....	174
Frolov, Asher.....	161, 230

IV

G	Page
Gabay, Ilya Yankelovich	148, 157, 270
Galanskov, Olga	276
Galanskov, Yuri Timofeyevich	137, 147, 148, 150, 177, 186, 189, 190, 237, 276
Galperin, Aleksandr	280
Garkushev	187, 188
Garushkin, Major	196
Gavrilov, Gennady Vladimirovich	268, 270, 273, 274
Gedoniy, Aleksandr Gidoni	150, 176
Gendler, Yuriy L.	147
Gereta	254
Germany	136, 141
Ginzburg, Aleksandr Illich	147, 148, 154, 177, 186, 189-191
Ginzburg, Evgenia	176
Goncharov	160
Gorbanevskaya, Natalya	152, 278
Gorky	176, 182
GPU	158
Gragosh	184
Grani (publication)	147-153
Grebenshchikov, Vasilii Fedorovich (Viktor Orestovich)	149
Greek-Catholic Church	203, 204
Grengauz	161
Grigorenko, Gen. Pyotr	157, 192, 199, 268, 278
Grigorenko, Zinaida	200
Grillus, Simonas Aronovich	225
Gromov, Colonel	169, 187, 267
Gurney, Senator Edward J.	129-145
Guseva	176
Gyunashyan, Shirak	149

H

Halsky, Senior Lieut.	241-243
Harashchenko	259
Herzen, Alexander	269
Hevrych, Yaroslav	167, 244-246, 251, 252, 254, 256, 265
Horbach, L.	255
Horbovly, Dr.	167, 265
Horodetsky, Petro	203
Horska	252
Horyn, Bogdan	245, 246, 248, 251, 262
Horyn Mykhailo	245, 246, 250, 251, 254, 255, 259-262
Horyn, Olha	254, 255
Hungary	144, 176

I

Igurtsov, Igor	279
Ilin, Lieutenant	268
Ilkiv, Olha	242
Inta (concentration camp)	154
Iran	136
Iron Curtain	173
Isakova	176
Ishevsk	132
Israel	136,
	137, 142, 147, 156, 161, 194, 197, 225, 226, 230, 234, 235, 237
Italy	136
Ivanov	186, 187, 189
Ivanov, Anatoliy M. (real name: Novogodniyy)	150
Ivanov, Major	158
Ivanov, Nikolay Viktorovich	147, 177, 179, 187, 190, 191
Ivanov, Yuriy Evgenevich	149, 190, 191
Ivanovich, Leonid	184
Ivanovich, Valeriy	181
Ivanyshyn	246

	Page
Ivashchenko	246
Ivlev, Anatoly	177
Ivovoylov	181
Ivovoylov, Vladimir Fedorovich	150, 177, 179, 186
Izvestia (publication)	198, 218, 263
Izza	161

J

Jehovah's Witnesses	185, 260
Jews	137, 142
"Jews, Repression of, in the Soviet Union" (article)	222
Juridical Department	132

K

Kadet Party	159
Kalash, Colonel	241, 243
Kalita, Ivan	248
Kalynynsh, Viktor Yanovich	149
Kamenskikh, Nikodim	201
Kaminsky, Lassal	238, 234
Karaganda	173
Karavansky, Svyatoslav	167, 245, 265, 281
Kazakov	259, 262
Keshka	163, 166
KGB (secret police)	133-
136, 141, 142, 148-152, 155, 164, 167, 169, 176, 179, 182-184, 188-190, 194-196, 203, 237, 241-243, 246, 248-254, 256, 258-260, 264-266	
Khabibulin, Major	178
Khachatryan, Ashot	179
Khachatryan, Ayk Karaevich	149, 189
Khakhaev, Sergey	153, 154, 184
Khanokh, Aryeh	230
Khanzhenkov, Sergey	154
Khatsko	254
Khaustov, Viktor Aleksandrovich	150
Khnokh, Leib Girshevich	225, 280
Khnokh, P. B.	225
Kholodnyi, M.	249
Khronika (publication)	149
Khrushchev	160, 162, 163, 198, 201, 246, 260, 263
Kinger	169-175
Kitsayev, Captain	167, 265
Klymenko, Captain	253, 255
Knocks, M. Gordon	154
Knosov, Mikhail Borisovich	179
Kokorev, V.	200
Kolesnikov (Kolyasnikov)	242, 270
Kolodochka, Captain	184
Kolosov, Mikhail	177
Kolya	190
Kolyma	173, 174
Komsomol (Young Communist League)	149, 150, 207, 213, 273
Konhukhov	182
Konosov, Mikhail Borisovich	147, 181, 189, 191
Konstantinov, Stanislav	177
Kontsevych, Yevhen	250, 254
Konukhov, Mikhail	179, 182
Koreyko, V.	244
Kornblit, Lev	231
Korotnytskyi, Yaroslav	250
Korzorez, Nikolay Sergeevich	154
Koshevoy	183
Kosiv, M.	246, 254
Kostenko, L.	244
Kosygin	189, 196

	Page
Kosyrev, Aleksei Vasilevich	270, 272-274
Koval, Captain	155, 254
Kozachuk	242
Kozlov, Captain	260
Krasin, Viktor	148, 152, 200
Krasnopevtsev, Lev	151
Krasnov-Levitin. (See Levitin.)	
Krassnodar	181
Kravtsev	263
Kremlin	134, 195
Krivoi, Yakov Nikiforovich	204-207, 209, 211, 216, 221
Krivtsov, Volodya	185
Kruglov, Captain	193, 196
Krut, Captain Ivan Romanovich	166, 168, 183, 184, 243, 259, 261-264, 266
Kryuchkov	217
Kukui, Vladimir	280
Kulmagambetov, Makhmed	258
Kuprianov, L. A.	213
Kurchava, Fylymon	208
Kushev, Evgeniy Igorevich	148
Kushev, Yevgeniy	159
Kutuzov	191
Kuzin, Vyacheslav	186
Kuzmenko, N. V.	205, 215
Kuznetsov, Eduard (Edik) Samuilovich	138, 140, 150, 161, 169-173, 193-195, 197, 226, 227, 231, 232, 234
Kuznetsova	245, 246
Kwantung Army	136

L

Lashkova, V	147, 148, 150, 200
Lefortovo Prison	154, 180, 181
Lenin, V. I.	143, 189, 197, 200, 204, 214, 247, 248
Leningrad	137
Lermontov	184, 216
Lesyn	242
Levit, Shimon	230, 232
Levtin, Anatoly (pen name: Krasnov)	148, 157, 198-201
L'Espresso (publication)	193
Lily Ontman	238
Lithuania	165
Litvinov, Pavel	152, 192, 193, 201, 202
Liubarsky	237
Logvinenko, V. Y.	211, 212, 215
Lopadchak, Ivan	203
Lorentas	257
Lubyanka Prison	133, 154, 158, 178
Lukianenko, Levko	260-262
Lyalin, General	179
Lytvyn, Captain	241, 243, 250, 260, 262
Lyubayev, Senior Lieut.	263

M

Maklarsky	133
M. Gorkiy Literary Institute	147
Maksym, Ivan	167, 265
Maksvmiv, Liuba	253
Malyarchyn	253
Malykhin	167, 254, 261, 265
Malyshko, A.	244, 245
Mao	263
Marchenko, Anatoly Tikhonovich	147, 152, 153, 161, 192, 202, 277
Markman	237
Martynenko	246

VII

	Page
Martyniuk	245, 246
Martin, David	120
Marusenko	262
Masiutko, Mykhailo	261, 262
Matrosskaya Tishina (prison)	158
Matviyenko, A	258
Mayakovskiy	246
Mayboroda, P	244
Mayboroda, H	245
Mazai	163, 164
Meandrov, General	154
Medium Machinery Ministry	132
Melnikans	243
Melnychenko	254
Melnychuk	250
Mendelevich, E. M	226
Mendelevich, Iosif Mozusovich	194, 195, 226, 230, 235
Mendelevich, M. A	226
Mendelvitsh, Yefrem	161
Meray, Tibor	176
Merkatanenko, Captain	241
Merkushev, Slava	189, 190
MGB	158, 170
Mikhaylovna, Evgeniya	188
Miklashevich, Alexander	177
Ministry of Defense	132, 133
Ministry of Light Industry	132
Misha	164
Mogilever, Vladik	232, 233, 235
Mogilever, Vladimir	230
Monakhov	192
Mordovia (concentration camp)	154, 191
Morhun	256
Moroz, Valentyn	215, 246, 256, 257, 281
Moscow	131, 132
Moshkov, Yuriy (Sergey Moshkov)	153
Murzhenko, Aleksey	140, 195, 226, 230, 234
Mussa	163
MVD (Ministry of Interior)	149, 169-171, 174, 187, 189
"My Evidence" (book)	192
"My Testimony" (book)	152, 161, 202, 222, 277

N

Nagorniy, Valeriy	147, 177, 181
Nazis	130, 137, 141
Nekrasov, Senior Lieut	266
Nekachan	168, 266
Nikitchenko	254
Nikitin, A	270-272
Nikodim, Metropolitan	201
Nikolaev	213, 214
Nikolaevich, Georgiy	182
Norilsk	173
Novikov, Captain	166, 264
Novocherkassk Uprising	185
Novosibirsk	184
Novyy Mir (publication)	179
NTS (anti-Communist organization)	137, 154, 155, 177, 185, 278
Nuremberg	261

O

Obushenkov, N. G	151
Odessa	133
Ogurtsov, Igor Vyacheslavovich	150, 176-178, 181, 187, 188, 191
Orlovich	185, 186

Osadchyl, M.	Page
OSB Publishing House	245, 247, 253, 255, 256
Osher	241, 244, 257, 264
Osipov, V.	161
Ovsyanko, Mykola	150
Ozernyi	203
	246, 249, 251, 252, 254-256

P

Pachovskyi	246
Palatnik, Katia	227
Palatnik, Raiza Anatolyevna	226, 227, 238
Palatnik, Yekatrina	226
Paradovskaya	214
Paradzhanov, S.	244
Paramonov, Georgy Konstantinovich	270, 274
Paraskevych	254
Patcugan, Captain	285
Patrushev, Vasilii	185
Penson, Boris	227, 230, 234, 238
Peredenko	251
Perm	160, 161
Petlyak	255
Petrenko, Dr.	273
Petrishevskiy, Major	190
Petrov, Alexander (pseudonym: Agatov)	178, 189
Petruslavicus, Algidas	257
Phoenix (magazine)	148, 150
Plakhotniuk, M.	249
Platonov, Vyacheslav Mikhaylovich	151, 177, 178, 179, 181, 182, 186, 191
Podgornyy, N.	148
Poland	136, 256, 262, 274
Poltoratskyi	263
Pomerantsev, V. M.	270, 272
Portnoy, Dr. V.	225
Posev (publication)	191, 192
Postnikov, Major	180, 181, 189
Potma	136, 138, 154, 156, 160, 228, 236
Prague	145
Priboy (publishing house)	247
Prisoners of Conscience (table)	224
Prisoners of Zion	237, 238
"Profits of Slavery, The" (book)	169
Pushkin House	176
Pushkin Square Demonstration	200

R

Radyanska Ukraina (newspaper)	245
Rapota	255
Red Cross	171, 172, 226, 228
Red Square Demonstration	200
Reddaway, Peter	176, 197, 268
Rendel, Leonid A.	151
Republic Psychiatric Hospital	273
Reuter, E.	155
Revolutionary Voices (publication)	241, 244, 257, 264
Richardas	164, 165, 166
Rodichev, F. I.	159
Rodionov	161
Romanov	248
Romm, Boris	192
Ronkin, Valeriy Efinmovich	149, 152-154
Roosevelt	183
Rosenblum, Louis	222
Rozenbergs, Villis	173

IX

	Page
RPP (Russian Progressive Party)-----	186
Rudyl, Captain-----	253
Rudyk-----	247
Russian Orthodox Church-----	160, 199, 200
Russkoye Slovo (magazine)-----	148
Rusyn-----	245, 246
Ruzayevka-----	168
Rybalchenko, Captain-----	253, 255
S	
Sado, Mikhail Yukhanovich-----	150, 176-178, 181, 187, 188, 190, 191
Sado, Yuriy Yukhanovich-----	181
Sadoyivskiy-----	246
Sakharov-----	144, 152
Salekhrada-----	173
Samizdat (publication)-----	148, 152, 166, 192, 197-200, 202, 269-271
Samovarniy (factory)-----	182
Saransk-----	181, 186, 189, 190
Science and Religion (publication)-----	263
Scott, Samuel J-----	129
Sedov, Major-----	179
Semenkin, N-----	199
Semenenko, M-----	151
Sendurska-----	256
Sergadeyev, Colonel-----	253
Serpilin, L-----	244
Shalernaya Prison-----	158
Shamrai-----	205, 215
Shavrov, Vadim-----	148, 200
Shcherbakov, Nikolai-----	140, 163, 164
Shelest-----	204
Shepshelovich, Mikhail-----	230, 238
Shepshelovich, Misha-----	231
Shevchenko, Nikolai Pavlovich-----	204-206, 211, 215, 218, 221
Shifrin, Avraham-----	129-145
Shkolnik-----	237
Shneider, Iosif-----	156
Shor, Hilel-----	238
Shpilberg, Aaron-----	231, 233
Shukhevich-Berezynskya, Natalia-----	243
Shukhevich-Berezynskiy, Yuri-----	241, 275
Shukhevich, Roman-----	241
Shulgin, V-----	247, 248
Shulzhenko, General-----	248, 259
Shumuk, Danyol-----	262
Shuvalov, Oleg-----	177
Shveisky, V. Ya-----	201
Siberia-----	133, 156, 198, 258
Silde, Adolfs-----	169
Sinyavskiy, Andrey Donatovich-----	148, 151, 152, 179, 180, 182, 183, 186, 191-193, 264
Sivers, E-----	149
Skochko, P-----	245
Skuinek, Knut-----	262
Slutskiy, Boris Abramovich-----	147, 179
Smersh (military counterintelligence)-----	183
Smirnova-----	242
SMOG (organization)-----	150
Social Christian Resistance-----	279
Sokolskiy-----	189, 190
Soldatov, Sergei I-----	270-274
Solikamsk Prison-----	152
Solovyov, V I-----	176
Solovyova, Svetlana Pavlovna-----	204, 205, 207-209, 214, 218, 221
Solzhenitsyn-----	144

	Page
Soroka, Mykhailo.....	166, 168, 264-266
Sorokin, Major.....	235
Sotsializm i Demodratiya (magazine).....	148
Sourwine, J. G.....	129-145
Soviet Jewry.....	129
Spain.....	136
Spirin, Major.....	184
Stalin.....	183, 144, 160, 183, 198, 246-248
Stelmakh, M.....	244, 245
Sternuk, V.....	203
Stolypin, P. A.....	159
Stotsenko, Vasilii Illarionovich.....	183
Strikes and Uprisings in Soviet Labor Camps (table).....	175
Stroyeva, E.....	200
Subbotin.....	162, 163
Sudarev, Anatoliy.....	147
Sudarey.....	181
Sudaryov, Anatoly.....	177
Sukhanov.....	247
Suslensky, Jacob Michaelovich.....	233, 235
Suslinsky, Yakov.....	161
Sverdlov, Major.....	262
Svitlychna.....	245
Svitlychnyi, Ivan.....	246, 248, 250, 251
Sweden.....	137

T

Tabakov, Major.....	196
Taiwan.....	143, 144
Talantov, Boris Vladimirovich.....	148, 157, 158, 199-201, 279
Talantov, Gleb.....	201
Tarabochia, A. L.....	129
Tarnavskiy, Nikolay Andreyevich.....	154
Tashkent.....	157
Tayshet.....	134, 135, 136, 156
Terekhov.....	188
Terts, Abram (pseudonym of Andrey Sinyavskiy).....	151
Tikhonov, Major.....	273
Tikhonovites.....	185
Timchak, Vasil Terentievich.....	204, 213, 216, 219, 221
Titov, Yuriy.....	200
Tkach.....	163, 166
Tkachuk, Yarema.....	262
Tolbuzov, Colonel (nickname: Gobbels).....	156
Trachtenberg, Lazar.....	235, 238
Tregubov, Yuri Andreyevich.....	154
Tremmel, Valery Petrovic.....	154
Tribuna (publication).....	197
Troitskiy, Zinovi Anatolyevich.....	185
Trotsky.....	144, 247
Trud (publication).....	200
Trukhin, General.....	154
Trushin.....	197
Trushnovich, Dr. Alexander Rudolfovich.....	137, 155, 278
Tsehel'sky, Ihnaty.....	203
Tula.....	131
Tvardovskiy.....	179

U

Ukraine.....	203, 241, 249-251, 256, 253, 260, 262, 269
Ulyanov.....	248
"Uncensored Russia" (book).....	176, 268
UNESCO (United Nations Scientific and Cultural Organization).....	261
Uniate Church.....	203

	Page
Union of Councils for Soviet Jews.....	222, 228
Union of Patriots of Russia (organization).....	151
United Nations.....	152, 195, 200, 257, 261, 263, 264
Ustinovich, Sergei.....	177

V

Vagin, Evgeniy Aleksandrovich.....	151, 176, 181, 182, 186, 187, 191
Vanin, Evgeniy Aleksandrovich.....	179
Vartsabulk.....	243
Vasiliev, Leonid.....	199, 200
Vasilyan, Ovik M.....	149
Vasilyev, Major.....	194
Vasilyevich, Vyacheslav.....	188
Velychkovsky, Bishop Vasyl.....	203
Veretenov, Vladimir.....	148, 177
Verkholiak, Dmytro.....	265
Vietnam.....	144
Viktorovich, Nikolay.....	182
Vinogradov.....	242
Vins, G. P.....	203, 217
Virun, Stepan.....	261
Vishnevskaya, J.....	200
Vladik.....	233
Vladimir Prison.....	162, 163, 166, 177, 178, 190, 241, 263
Vladimirskaia Prison.....	149-154, 188
Vlasov, General.....	154
Volno-Yasenetsky.....	219
von Rauch, G.....	176
Vorbut, Olga.....	255
Vorkuta (concentration camp).....	154, 156, 173
Vorobyov, Oleg.....	200
Voroshilov.....	163
Vovchanakyl.....	262
Vudka, Yury Z.....	227

W

Wall Street.....	143
Wallenberg, Raoul.....	137
Watchtower, The (publication).....	185
West Germany.....	154, 271
Wolff.....	161
World War II.....	135, 140
Wrangel Island.....	136, 137

Y

Yakhimovich, Ivan.....	157
Yakir, Pyotr.....	192, 200, 270-272, 275
Yakobson, Anatoliy.....	192
Yakovchenko.....	214
Yakunin, Gleb.....	200
Yasovetskiy, Galia.....	185
Yasovetskiy, Karl.....	185
Yaya (concentration camp).....	154
"Year 1919, The" (book).....	247
Yegenova.....	233
Yeremeyeva.....	167, 265
Yesenin-Volpin, A.....	192, 200
Yevdokimov, Mykola.....	166, 265
Yezhov.....	259
"Young Guards, The" (book).....	183
Yugoslavia.....	155
Yukhanovich, Yuriy.....	178
Yukunin, Rev.....	200
Yuleshkin.....	215

	Page
Yursha	257
Yzhov	160

Z

Zabaykin, Senior Lieutenant.....	166, 264
Zaborsky, Viktor Mikhailovich.....	204, 205, 212, 213, 220, 221
Zaitsev, Valeriy.....	153
Zalmanson, Abraham.....	228
Zalmanson, Israel V.....	227, 230, 234, 280
Zalmanson, Silva (Sylvia) Iosifovna.....	137, 150, 161, 194-197, 225-228, 230-232, 234, 280
Zalmanson, Volf Iosifovich.....	227, 230, 280
Zalmanson, Z. I.....	227
Zalygin, S.....	252
Zalyvakha, P.....	246, 248, 262, 263
Zarubin, Dmitriy.....	185
Zatvokhyan, Stepan.....	179
Zeidilfed	161
Zdorovets, Boris.....	203
Zhinocha Dolya (publication).....	246
Zheludkov, Sergei.....	202
Zobak, Olgerd.....	177
Zvarychevska	245, 255